

## **PREFACE to 2nd EDITION**

The first part of the present book was published in 1963 under the title of RAW-EATING. In that little volume, which comprised a brief summary of my conceptions on nutrition, I had touched upon almost every important aspect of raw eating. Generally speaking, there is no need to enter into long-winded details in order to declare to the world the simple truth that the operations of cooking and refining, by means of which natural nutrients are degenerated into unnatural substances, are not only harmful operations that break the laws of nature, but they are also the chief cause of all diseases. The most ignorant person can clearly perceive that, instead of freeing people from diseases, the medical science that is based on cooked foods and poisonous drugs leads mankind into a multitude of serious ailments, from which all other living creatures are immune.

After reading only a few lines on the subject, the clear-sighted person wakes up from his lethargic indifference and realizes the full gravity of the situation. The vast majority of people, however, wish to have further information on the subject, as they are blinded by current misconceptions of medical science and prejudiced by a host of preconceived ideas. That is why, in the second part of this book, I have come forward with additional and more detailed explanations on a number of crucial questions. At the same time, advantage has been taken of the opportunity to make several small revisions and corrections in the first part. During the first edition of the book, the idea of raw eating was still in its rudimentary stages; today it has been put into practice in a great many countries. By

giving up cooked foods and poisonous drugs, thousands of sensible people all over the world have cured themselves of their long-standing illnesses and are now able to enjoy a carefree life of health and happiness. At the end of the book I have given a small selection of the numerous letters received from such people.

When a new machine or instrument is invented, a few successful tests are deemed sufficient to confirm or prove that invention. Today, thousands of healthy people throughout the world are living proof that raw eating saves mankind from the ruthless clutches of every disease on earth. One might well have thought that this would have sufficed to arouse the scientific world from its sluggish apathy and convince everybody of the enormous benefits that raw eating brings for us all. Today people who are blinded by addictions organize international conferences to combat the supposed world shortage of foodstuffs and deliver endless speeches on ridiculous subjects, while 80 percent of the real foodstuffs given to us by nature are thoughtlessly destroyed with their own hands by cooking and refining.

I appeal to all true humanitarians to raise their voices and, by their continual demands, invite the authorities to take immediate steps to put the principles of raw eating into practice. The time is ripe for action.

## **PART ONE**

### **How I Conceived the Idea of Raw Eating**

Raw vegan food should be the only nourishment taken by man. The habit of eating cooked food should

be abandoned in this world once and for all. This is the unerring demand of nature. The consumption of cooked food is the most terrible barbarism in the history of mankind, a barbarism that no one seems to be aware of and to which everybody falls an unconscious victim. No matter how strange the idea may seem to some, it is the absolute truth with which we cannot but acquiesce.

This truth became evident to me when, after 18 years of careful study and investigation, I became convinced that the deaths of my 10-year-old son and 14-year-old daughter were caused by unnatural nutrition. The great number of medical examinations carried out in Iran, France, Germany, and Switzerland in various attempts made to discover some specific disease in their organisms and the subsequent administration of numerous remedies had a considerable share, too, in bringing the tragedy to a head. My children died of the gradual emaciation and wasting away of all their organs caused by unnatural feeding and poisonous medicines.

I have been able to penetrate into the secrets of medical science and to observe its good and bad aspects all the more clearly because I have not been inspired by the prospect of becoming a doctor or of making any financial gains. My incentive has been, in the first place, the wish to do my best for the recovery of the health of my beloved children, and later, the ardent desire to perpetuate their memory by being useful to humanity.

Another factor that has contributed to my better realization of the shortcomings of medical science is the entirely new system by which I have carried out my studies by self-education, free from the encumbrance of an academic program. I have never become intoxicated

by the exaggerated claims of progress made on behalf of medical science or by all the fanciful tales of the fabulous benefits to be derived from medicines. I have approached these questions with a critical mind and have always laid greater stress on their shortcomings. Moreover, I have constantly kept in view the fact that, in spite of the existence of millions of qualified doctors and a large number of Nobel Prize winners, civilized man falls victim to various illnesses more often than any other animal, and diseases like sclerosis, diabetes, heart attacks, and cancer increase at an alarming rate, threatening to wipe out mankind from the face of the earth. I have not wasted my time in memorizing the symptoms of diseases, the names and doses of medicines, and those numerous complicated formulae that are seldom needed, because I have never had the intention of sitting for examinations and obtaining degrees. Instead, so far as possible, I have devoted my time to the study of a great many branches of science and to the examination of the multifarious sources of knowledge, from the fundamental and general principles of which I have been able to draw certain essential, vital conclusions.

The results of 18 years of painstaking study and labor have been embodied in a work of two large volumes, the first of which, a book of 568 pages, was published in Armenian in 1960.

**The efficient operation of every factory is subject to the uniform supply of all the raw materials specified by the engineer**

Until the discovery of fire, along with the rest of the animal kingdom, humans had developed and carried out

their evolution by the consumption of natural, raw nourishment. But since the discovery of fire, without much reflection, human have put natural foodstuffs on the fire, have destroyed their essential constituents, have debased them, and have then nourished their bodies with them. As a direct consequence, there have resulted all the diseases from which all mankind suffer today.

The human organism is a living factory constructed by the unceasing efforts of nature. Simultaneously with the construction of this factory, our wonderful nature has made use of the rays of the sun to develop all the raw materials that are necessary to coordinate the thousands of complicated operations of our organism and to ensure corresponding production. Furthermore, nature has placed those raw materials in their entire perfection and in the faultless harmony of their various constituents in a tiny grain of corn, in a pulpy seed of a pomegranate, in a berry of the grape, or in a leaf of a plant. Each of the "paltry" foodstuffs taken separately contains all those factors that are necessary to keep alive the living organism of a being like man.

In the material world the smallest deviation from the details developed by an engineer for the smooth working of the mechanism of a factory, or a fault in the raw materials specified to ensure its normal productivity, results in a corresponding breakdown in the operation of the plant. In the same way, the slightest deterioration or alteration in the raw materials prescribed by nature to ensure the smooth operation of the complicated processes of the human organism causes disorders in the normal biological functions of

our organs, and these disorders appear in the form of diseases.

The various methods employed by man in destroying or degenerating the fully balanced raw materials prescribed by nature for the normal operation of his organism do not bear thinking. For that purpose, civilized man has invented demoniacal factories, ovens, furnaces, and kitchens. Every degeneration in the quality of natural foodstuffs is followed by a corresponding degeneration in the human organism. Natural nutrition ensures the normal operation of our organism, while unnatural nutrition is followed by an abnormal discharge of its functions. The multiplicity of illnesses is the result of the great diversity of degeneration in the constituents of natural foodstuffs.

Provided that all its needs are satisfied by the laws of nature, the human organism, which is the most perfect organism in the animal kingdom, can live in excellent health from a minimum of 150 years to a maximum of 200-250 years. Cooked foodstuffs force human organs to work at several times their normal capacity, tire them out prematurely, cause various illnesses, and shorten man's life to a fraction of its normal span. In the present age of scientific advance, man could get rid of all the diseases by complete abstinence from cooked food, and he could then devote his energies to the study of the problems of longevity only. Simultaneously with natural nutrition, man must also make certain that the rest of his natural requirements are satisfied. These are clean air, early sleeping, early rising, physical labor, abstinence from artificial heating, cleanliness, and so forth.

## **Direct and Indirect Nutritional Diseases**

Nutritional diseases are divided into two main categories: direct and indirect ailments. Direct nutritional diseases are those that are caused by a superabundance of certain nutritional constituents or a deficiency of others. Fire and animal foodstuffs have the effect of concentrating and increasing the proteins and the fats in the diet, while at the same time eliminating substances of high nutritive value. Science has so far been able to recognize only a negligible number of these substances, which have been named vitamins and without which life cannot exist. Among the direct nutritional diseases are to be placed all chronic disorders and deficiency diseases. The diseases develop with extreme slowness and secrecy. So long as the disease has not entered its final stages and the organs have not stopped working, the individual regards himself as healthy. In the event of partial and mixed vitamin deficiencies, the disease does not appear by the symptoms particular to avitaminosis that are described in textbooks; rather, it makes its appearance by complaints that are not easy to explain.

Indirect digestive ailments are the infectious diseases. In the human organism there live usually a large variety of microbes, which in normal circumstances render useful service to the organism and which are subject to the control of specialized (differentiated) human cells, to whose commands they compliantly submit. But through faulty nutrition, the degenerated and emaciated cells are so weakened that by the Law of Survival, those microbes get the upper hand, set themselves free from the control of those cells, rebel against their masters, become pathogenic,

and cause the infectious diseases so well-known to us. Sometimes the invading army of assailing microbes, which would have met with irresistible opposition in a healthy organism and would have been destroyed at once, does not meet with such opposition in an emaciated organism and causes its specific infection.

In the second volume of my Armenian book, I have devoted considerable space to the problem of infectious diseases, for the examination of which I have analyzed certain portions of the first volume of the treatise on "Pathological Anatomy and the Pathogenesis of Human Diseases" by the eminent Soviet scientist I.V. Davydovsky, published in 1956. By means of numerous convincing facts, the author proves that it is not the microbes themselves that are guilty of causing infectious diseases, but the poor condition of the body and the decline in its power of immunity. But unfortunately, like all cooked food addicts, Davydovsky, too, is unable to explain how we can restore that immunity or, better still, prevent its decline.

The fear of microbes has so frightened people that to escape them they have recourse to the most dangerous measures, and yet they obtain entirely opposite results. The cooking of raw foodstuffs in order to avoid microbes is one of the most fateful mistakes in medical science. We cannot exterminate microbes from the face of the earth. They are found everywhere, they will always exist, and they can enter our organisms through multifarious channels. In particular, by cooking our food, we first of all weaken the resistance of our cells, and then we destroy in our foodstuffs those natural antibiotics that are destined by nature to fight against microbes. Even those doctors who are addicted to



cooked food confirm that many vitamins, which are destroyed on the fire, have bacterial properties. That is why animals that feed on rubbish heaps are not nearly so subject to infectious diseases as man is.

### **The Cancer Cell Is the Direct Offspring of Degenerated Food**

Many cooked-food eaters are inclined to believe that because man has fed on cooked food for centuries on end, he must be accustomed to it and may now suffer if he starts eating raw food all at once. In other words, if we have filled a motorcar with dirty and inferior petrol for a certain time, the engine may have become used to it, and it may be damaged if the dirty petrol is replaced by clean fuel.

First of all, a period of a few thousand years is nothing compared with the billions of years during which, along with his ancestors, man lived and developed exclusively on raw food. Besides, that man has not, in fact, become habituated to cooked food is proven by the very existence of diseases, which disappear, and the organism then returns to its normal functions once man has recourse to raw nourishment.

It is true that by the laws of evolution our organism tries to adapt itself to the food it receives, but not in the way that some people imagine. Those nutritive constituents of food that are essential for the complicated processes and the specialized major functions of the cells are easily destroyed under the influence of fire. Therefore, the foodstuffs that are considered nutritious by cooked-eaters lack those essential constituents, but instead they have an

abundant supply of proteins, fats, and carbohydrates, several times in excess of the demands of the cells.

Being continually deprived of those nutritive constituents that are essential for the discharge of their higher functions, the cells either do not attain their full development and specialization or, having once attained them, they later lose their faculty of performing those functions. After several years of privations and endurance, there comes a day when one of several of the milliards of cells, deprived of their remaining capabilities, are finally freed from the mechanisms that limit the growth of cells. They then separate themselves from communal life, become autonomous, and avariciously devour those tissue-building materials that swim in the intercellular fluid in large quantities, having been rejected by the normal cells as being greatly in excess of their needs, and which are proudly praised by gastrolatrous biologists—the proteins (especially animal proteins), the fats, and all the nitrogenous substances. After that they grow at an alarming speed, heedless and defiant, and multiply in a disorderly manner to form a terrible mass, a new living creature, which in the course of its growth subdues and destroys everything in its surroundings and at last one fine day downs that wonderful edifice, the human body. The name of that new creature is cancer. It is the true offspring of cooked food, the living proof of how the cells are adapted to the structure of the foodstuffs man consume.

When life first appeared on our planet, nature had at its disposal only the most elementary building material (proteins, fats, and carbohydrates), from which it succeeded in creating the first single-celled organisms. Just as by the addition of a cylinder, an apparatus, or a

small detail an engineer adds a new function to his factory, so by subsequently adding a new constituent to its building materials (vegetable bodies), nature adds a new function to animal organs. This arduous task has kept nature busy for billions of years, during which period it has developed its raw materials from a common bacterium to the fruits that we know today, and through the agency of those vegetable raw materials, but simultaneously with their evolution, it has developed the single-celled animal organism that it had created into a wonderful animal.

Unfortunately, after the discovery of fire, man's natural evolution has stopped, and, what is worse, it is retrogressing at a giant's pace. Fire and the other ridiculous means of degeneration invented by civilized man destroy all those superior nutritive properties that have been stored during billions of years in natural foodstuffs and consequently in animal cells and return them to their primitive type, but with the greatest diligence they supply the most common building materials that serve to ensure the aimless growth of those cells. The cancer cells are true specimens of those primitive cells. To shortsighted biologists the building materials of the body are the proteins, namely the mere stones and bricks of a very common structure. They are not interested in the different kinds of mortars or in the numerous details that are indispensable for the construction of a complicated factory and that do not exist in a beefsteak or a barbecue.

In the second volume of my Armenian book, I have devoted nearly 300 pages to the examination of the problem of the origin of cancer. For this purpose, I have reviewed an important treatise by the famous American

cytologist E. V. Cowdry entitled "Cancer Cells" (1955), which is the most exhaustive of the various studies on the subject and in which are collected all the important studies, data, opinions, and conclusions that have been published by numerous well-known scientists. On the basis of the research data obtained by the cytologists themselves, I have conclusively proved that cancer cells originate from a deficiency of superior nutritive constituents and a superabundance of those common building materials that encourage the aimless growth of cells.

### **Addiction to Cooked Food Is the Most Dangerous of All Vices**

The reader may naturally wonder why none of the numerous eminent scientists and professors sees these simple truths and why nobody tells us that the habit of eating cooked food is unnatural and dangerous. The reason is that the whole of mankind are food addicts, and food addiction has blinded everybody. Nobody realizes that cooked eating is a vice and that it is indeed the most terrible of all vices. It is not a craving after only one kind of substance, but the sum total of one's voracious longings for thousands of substances (and what "marvelous," "desirable" substances at that!). Besides, short-sighted cooked-food eaters see richness and excellence in the multiplicity of the debasements to which foodstuffs are subjected, whereas it is that very multiplicity of the debasements that gives rise to a multiplicity of harms, the true reflection of which can be seen in the large variety of illnesses that prevail in the world.

Man becomes addicted to those substances that contain poisons, such as tea, coffee, cocoa, tobacco, alcohol, opium, cocaine, morphine, etc. The strong craving for those substances is stimulated by corresponding poisons collected in the human organism. Cooked foods produce a large variety of poisons, which, in course of time, are stored in different parts of the organism, such as on the walls of the veins and the capillaries, between the joints, in the center of the fat cells, and elsewhere. Just as the craving of a drug addict for heroin does not arise from the normal physiological needs of his body, so the desire of a cooked-food eater for cooked food, his feeling of hunger, is not the normal demand of his organism; rather, it is the demand of his addiction. It is the expression of impulses that are stimulated by the poisons collected in the human organism; it is the demand of the diseases nestled in the body, the call of man's worst enemy.

That terrible vice is introduced into the body of every human being by his own parents, right from the cradle. That is why the moment a baby begins to take notice and start talking, food addiction has already secured a firm hold on him, and from that moment till the very end of his life, he regards cooked food as his normal diet and his strong craving for it as his physiological demand; it is this that he mistakes for real hunger.

### **The Demand for Cooked Food Is Not Hunger**

When a cooked-food eater tries to feed on exclusively natural foodstuffs, such as walnuts, grains, raw fruits, and vegetables, and he has no further appetite for any sort of raw food, the natural demands of his organism

are at that moment completely met, and he is satiated to the full. But in spite of this, even if he should have already taken several times his normal daily requirements of foodstuffs, he still behaves as though he had eaten nothing and feels a great demand for a dish of highly seasoned meat, rich and appetizing. This is not hunger anymore. It is the irritation caused by the poisons that have been stored in the body and that now demand fresh poisons. It is the cry of the demon that lies there sprawled and demands new tools to tear the human organism to pieces. The prudent, strong-willed raw eater hears that cry in all its vehemence day in and day out, but he ignores it with all his soul and does not make one jot of concession.

### **Cooked Eating Forces the Human Organs to Work at Three to Four Times Their Normal Capacity**

All the human organs have a store of natural reserve energy. Usually, they work at a quarter of their potential capacity, keeping the rest of their energy for later use in a special emergency or during old age. Thus, in "normal" circumstances the pulse rate of the heart is 70-72 beats per minute (while that of a raw-eater is only 58-62), which in exceptional circumstances may be raised to over 200 beats per minute. Again, during normal respiration 500 c.c. of air passes into and out of the lungs, but by a special respiratory effort we can inspire as much as 3700 c.c.

The raw-eater makes use of his digestive organs at one-quarter their potential capacity, as a result of which his organs are never overloaded or fatigued. The cooked-eater, on the other hand, after stimulating his

appetite by means of conditioned reflexes, irritating spices, aperitifs, and other absurd stimulants, fills his stomach to such an extent that the digestive organs are forced to bring into action all their reserve energies, and even then they are unable to cope with the demand placed upon them. Whereupon man is forced to return the loathsome food by the same channel as he sent it down or to expel it from his intestines with purgatives. Surprisingly enough, such nauseating acts are not considered strange by a cooked-eater.

By the overloading of the digestive organs, a great many accessory organs are set to work, too, such as the heart, the liver, and the kidneys. The additional work performed by these organs soon has the effect of tiring them out and putting them out of action prematurely. It is not surprising, therefore, that as a result, one's life is shortened several times. By feeding on useless, harmful, and poisonous substances, the food addict gratifies his passions, paralyzes the action of his stomach, and creates for himself the illusion of being satisfied, whereas his cells are, in reality, moaning with hunger for lack of essential nutrients. The stomach of a raw-eater is always at rest, even though it is generally empty, but his body is indeed full and satisfied in the true sense of the word.

When a cooked-food eater decides to change over to raw eating, at first he never feels satisfied, no matter how much he eats. Usually instead of feeling happy, food addicts feel discontented with that condition. In their opinion, the reason for their continuous hunger lies in the fact that the foodstuffs that they consume are of low nutritional value and are worthless as nourishment. This is a terrible misconception. On the

contrary, those foodstuffs are both nutritious and fully balanced. The human cells have suffered for years from their absence. The capacities of the human digestive organs fully correspond to their composition and the arrangement of their constituents. That is why the stomach gladly welcomes those foodstuffs, softens them quickly, and passes them to the intestines without much delay, while the cells, in their own turn, emaciated and weakened as they are with starvation, avidly absorb those valuable substances and repeatedly demand more and more of them.

The diseased cells are healed, the emaciated ones recuperate, and the inactive regain their vitality. The fat cells, on the other hand, begin to melt away through starvation, the accumulations of poisons gradually disappear, and the superfluous water leaves the body. Then normal, active cells take the place of those sluggish cells that were fattened with indolence and inaction. The quick loss in the weight of the body is a sure sign of regained health and vigor.

This fact should fill the heart of a man with joy and happiness. For those nutrients immediately spread throughout his body and grant him health, strength, vigor, and energy. It is the first time in his life that although all his organs and glands obtain a most copious supply of nourishment, they are able to work in comfort and ease. Even if on that day, he takes a greater quantity of raw food than his organism requires, or his intestines and cells are able to absorb, his stomach will not refuse it, nor will it generate in him a feeling of nausea, causing him to expel it with violence and force. The foodstuffs in excess of his normal needs will not stay in the stomach to cause putrefaction; they



will not be turned into poisons or bring about any digestive disorders. Instead, without undergoing digestion, they will at once pass from the stomach into the intestines and will then leave the body with the feces on that very day, not having caused the least harm to the organism. Thus, his stomach will always be light, while his intestines and his blood will be loaded with fully balanced nutrients.

Then in such a moment, let him just try to eat a few morsels of cooked food. His stomach will indignantly refuse those strange and unwanted substances. In spite of the extreme pleasure that his palate feels, those morsels will lie in his stomach for a long time; they will act as a stopper to close his appetite and will paralyze the normal course of his digestive activities. But a cooked-eater is quite contented and happy with that condition, because he has satisfied his passions, he has stuffed his stomach, and is now "full." The man who realizes the value of raw eating dreads that condition. He fully comprehends that it is the raw vegetable nutrients that nourish the body, while the dead corpses that come out of the fire are mere fuel and sources of various poisons and diseases.

### **Human Nourishment Should Consist of Living Cells and Not Corpses of Dead Cells**

Fully balanced foodstuffs consist of living cells. Now vegetable bodies, after leaving the earth, remain alive for a long time. A rosebud continues to blossom in a vase, while grains sprout on being planted years after they are gathered. But the cells of animals that are killed or those of milk that is stolen from their bodies die at once, and then they begin to disintegrate and

turn into poisons, while cooking converts them into something really terrible. To regard animal proteins as superior to vegetable proteins is a most unfortunate error of judgment, a manifest proof of the shortsightedness of meat-worshipping biologists. If we admit that the animal organism transfers vegetable proteins and turns them into fully balanced nutrients, then the flesh of those animals, such as foxes, wolves, dogs, cats, and tigers, that feed on such "fully balanced" proteins should be of the highest nutritive value; whereas the poisonous character of the flesh of such beasts is so obvious that even the most devoted meat addict does not dare to feed on it.

Those biologists who are urged by their personal predilection to look for special advantages in meat, in discovering the so-called irreplaceable amino acids, have not taken into consideration the fact that those amino acids are formed from the commonest grasses consumed by animals. By what rule of science has the organism of a cow the capacity to make amino acids from the meanest weeds and grasses, but the organism of a man has not the means to prepare the same compounds from vegetable foodstuffs of the highest nutritive quality? How are millions of Indians living without the amino acids provided by meat?

### **Short-Sightedness Is the Greatest Defect of Medical Science**

The greatest mistake of biologists who are addicted to cooked food is their shortsightedness. They close their eyes to those harms that appear small and do not

foresee the serious consequences that sooner or later result from seemingly negligible causes. Let us illustrate our statement with a few examples. Cooked meals, especially meat dishes, are full of poisons. Now, nobody takes any notice of the chronic poisoning that goes on imperceptibly all the time, and even when, as a result of such poisoning, the liver, the heart, or the kidneys are damaged in time, the condition is attributed to unknown causes. When the poisoning is still more severe and is accompanied by diarrhea and vomiting, it is regarded as a gastric disorder. By poisoning they understand only that condition that affects the whole organism and threatens the victim with immediate death. How many innocent lives are sacrificed in this way!

Men do not see the filth that passes into their arteries and veins through the medium of food every day, and when it sits layer after layer on the walls of the vessels, narrows their passages, and suddenly stops the circulation of the blood one day, shortsighted people regard the occurrence as "unexpected."

Men do not notice the terrific pressure exerted by heavy floodwaters rushing towards a mammoth dam that has a capacity of millions of tons. But when that dam, tottering for long under the impact of those floodwaters, collapses at last, the cause of its final breakdown is ascribed to the stone that was accidentally thrown at it by a little child. We have already seen the correct conception that a raw-eater holds as to the causes of cancer. Against this, the 400 "carcinogenic agents" presented to us by research scientists, who are addicted to cooked food, among which there are such items as mechanical irritations

and cigarette burns, have no greater value than the stone thrown by the child.

Every organ has millions of cells, by the concerted labors of which the work of that organ is carried on. When the nourishment forced upon those cells lacks certain essential constituents, the cells begin to lose their vitality and fall into disuse. The energy reserves now come into the field, but they, too, are soon exhausted. So long as the organ carries on its functions somehow or other, shortsighted people do not see the red light; but when at last it lags behind in its activities, they say that such an organ is ill and have recourse to medicines. But is it possible that a little pill or a dose of poison could ever replace the nutritive constituents of foodstuffs that have been burned over fire for years on end and return to the disabled cells their lost capacity for specialized work?

After lying in the alimentary canal for days, masses of meat, eggs, butter, and cheese undergo putrefaction and cause inflammation of the intestines, the most common symptom of which is diarrhea. But when a child does actually show signs of diarrhea, the whole blame is placed on a few fruit skins seen in the feces. Nobody asks how fruit skins can cause any inflammation in the bowels of the child when, without undergoing any putrefaction or decay, they leave the body unchanged within a few hours of their entry. The whole tragedy arises from the fact that people regard eggs, meat, butter, and honey as normal and essential foodstuffs, but fruit as something secondary, which may be either eaten or not eaten. Sometimes, it is even considered necessary to forbid children to eat fruit so as "not to put their stomach out of order."

## **The Weight of a Cooked-Food Eater Cannot Be Regarded as a Criterion of Good Health. Obesity Is the Most Dangerous Disease**

As long as the human organism is still able to resist an unnatural diet and to carry on its struggle against it, various complaints make their appearance, such as loss of appetite, indigestion, gastritis and other stomach disorders, colitis, and so on. All these are the outward expression of the struggle of the organism to use every means at its disposal to neutralize the harmful effects of an unnatural diet and to expel from the body the poisonous substances produced by it. The patient begins to lose weight, and then they try to strengthen him by giving him "nutritious" meals. The day when the organism is finally defeated and its struggle ceases, man either bids farewell to this world or, on the contrary, his appetite increases and he begins to eat insatiably, to digest well, to put on weight, "to regain his health and strength." In other words, on that day the human organism, abandoning its struggle, "adapts" itself to the unnatural diet, and the foundation is laid for one of the most dangerous of human diseases—unnatural corpulence.

Subdued by the pressure of unnatural diets, the body is forced to accommodate itself and to admit into the organism accumulations of various harmful substances produced by such diets. Deposits are then formed of fats, uric acid and its derivatives, cholesterol, common salt, excess liquids, calculi, scirrhus formations, tumors, inactive and parasitic cells, multinucleated giant cells (polykaryocytes), cells with oversized nuclei (megakaryocytes), etc. Sometimes these cells attain

several hundred times the size of normal cells, but they lack the capacity of doing any useful work.

All those monstrosities accumulate in the body to create in a man the illusion of health and strength, while in reality he suffers from gradual emaciation. His muscles become thin and feeble, the number of his specialized and active cells grows less, and his organs waste away. Those "stout," "robust" men with bulging paunches, thick fat arms, podgy hands, and overhanging layers of fat, of whom our world abounds, are, in reality, skeletons covered with skin. Each of them has loaded his weak and emaciated muscles with a fat sheep, which he feeds gratuitously and carries everywhere with him. But, strange to say, such people continually boast of their health, vigor, and strength. They are so proud of their stoutness that, whenever a reference is made to it in conversation, they touch wood or, in the East, cry, lest they should lose a grain of their cherished weight. One may fill a dozen volumes with examples of such deplorable short-sightedness.

### **No Medicine Can Replace the Raw Materials Destroyed in the Fire**

All the drugs in general use are symptomatic. In other words, they serve as palliatives to give temporary relief to the patient or to conceal the symptoms of the disease. In no case can they take the place of the raw nutrients destroyed in the cooking pots and pans. Many great scientists strictly forbid the use of drugs. In England, after painstaking research stretching over a period of four and a half years on a large section of the well-to-do strata of the English people, Peckham biologists came to the conclusion that only nine percent

of the population enjoyed good health; the remaining 91 percent of the people were ill, although most of them were not aware of their illness. After clinical treatments their conclusion was that almost without exception all the disorders that were selected for therapy responded to the treatment, but that subsequently a marked deterioration was observed in the general health of the patients. This means that drugs merely conceal the symptoms of a disease, while the harm that they do is added to the already weakened organism to make its condition even worse. Therefore, whoever wishes not to get ill or, if he has already become ill, to regain his health must not pin his hopes on drugs; rather, he must abstain from taking unnatural foods and drugs and must live according to the laws of nature by raw-eating!

This is the true, safe, and scientific way, whereas drug therapy is, to quote Bircher-Benner, only "deceit and trickery." In my opinion, it may be more appropriately called an illusion and self-deception. Nietzsche has called drugs "the lashes of the whip." Doctors can easily convince themselves of the truth of my statements by dividing their hospital patients into two equal groups, treating one of the groups by means of drugs and cooked foods, the other by a purely raw-eating diet, and then comparing the two results with each other. This is the basic and decisive test; otherwise, every argument against raw eating will continue to be without the least worth or value. Let us illustrate our statements with a few examples from symptomatic drug therapy.

Pain is the warning sign that the body is in danger, the cry of our organism for help. But instead of eliminating this danger, we deaden the nerves that

convey the sensation of this danger to our brain and silence their voice by a dose of poison. Meanwhile, the disease takes its inevitable course, aggravated now by the harmful effects of the drugs. To give another example: when the passages of our arteries grow narrow by being filled with impurities, the heart has to use a greater force to circulate the blood through the body, and as a result, the blood pressure rises. But instead of cleaning our blood vessels of those impurities, we merely use poisons to stimulate those nerves that are capable of stretching and widening their passages. So long as the efficacy of the poison lasts, the blood flows through the vessels more freely and the pressure temporarily falls. However, as soon as its effect passes off, the vessels return to their former condition, all the more weakened by the action of the drugs used.

There is no drug that does not have a harmful aftereffect on the organism. But it is only lately that a small number of publications have appeared dealing with this subject, one of which, "Reactions with Drug Therapy" (1955), by Dr. Harry L. Alexander, Emeritus Professor of Clinical Medicine, Washington University Medical School, gives us a great deal of useful information. Of course, generally drugs are held responsible for only those complications and reactions that immediately kill the victim or make their appearance in the form of serious diseases. Even then, only one in a thousand of those complications is actually recorded; the rest remain in eternal oblivion.

It has been established that every one of the 350,000 substances that are used for the preparation of drugs is capable of causing complications. But among them the



most dangerous are penicillin, aureomycin, streptomycin, mercury compounds, the sulphonamide group of drugs, digitalis, vaccines, serums, synthetic vitamins (thiamine, niacin, etc.), atophan, cortisone, liver extract, insulin, adrenaline, and many other drugs in common use.

It is important to give this question the most careful consideration. Synthetic vitamins and organic extracts, by which people wish to replace the nutritive constituents and their products burned in the kitchen, kill a person at lightning speed, very often within five minutes after their entry into the body. In 1951, 324 million, and in 1952, 350 million grams of penicillin alone were injected into the human blood in order to replace the natural antibiotics burned in the kitchen.

After their introduction into the human body, drugs kill thousands of people, sometimes within five to ten minutes, through anaphylaxis, while tens of thousands of others are subjected to a multitude of diseases, of which we may mention nettle-rash, dermatitis, prickly heat, eczema, purpura, bronchial asthma, polyarteritis, cirrhosis of the liver, jaundice, nephritis, nephrosis, aplastic anemia, serum sickness, and scabies.

People wish to turn a blind eye to the responsibility of those drugs in causing these deaths and diseases and to lay the blame on the supersensitiveness of the body. But as to what causes this supersensitiveness, they pass over the question in silence.

My poor children used to be affected by such illnesses and skin diseases several times a year. We would always try to look for the fault in the food they

ate, while the doctors who gave bundles of prescriptions never said a word about the dangers of the drugs that they prescribed. Like millions of others, we believed that medicines were only to cure people, not to make them ill. Once both my children were laid up with jaundice on the same day. We were struck with astonishment, for we knew that jaundice was not an infectious disease to affect them both together. Today, there is nothing I can do to alleviate the stings of my conscience but to warn other parents of such dangers.

Nowadays it is sad to observe how the most dangerous drugs are popularized by the help of sweet songs and attractive pictures as things beneficial that may be taken every day. In certain countries, indeed, medicine and pharmacy have been turned into huge concerns of commercialism and profiteering.

Raw eating will at once put an end to the use of all kinds of drugs, for in the absence of diseases there will naturally be no need for drugs. Diseases are the products of the degeneration of foodstuffs; they can only be conquered, therefore, by the correction of our diet. All our attempts to conquer diseases by means of drugs are extremely dangerous, senseless experiments that are doomed to failure. Already their deplorable consequences stare us in the face.

New types of diseases continually make their appearance; slight ailments give place to more serious disorders. As a result, man continually prepare new kinds of serums and vaccines, discover stronger and stronger antibiotics, and gradually become involved in a maze of errors, complications, and disasters.

An unprecedented and basic change must be made in the field of medical science. All honest and public-spirited doctors must at once rise and take active steps to prevent the destruction of the integral raw material intended for the human factory.

In the opinion of shortsighted people, raw eating is tantamount to a return to the primitive life of the prehistoric man. In point of fact, there is no greater disgrace to civilization than the operations of cooking and refining. The raw-eater merely forgoes the miseries caused by the so-called diseases of civilization and refuses to turn the technical progress bestowed upon him by civilization into a means of destroying the purity of the human raw materials. Otherwise, he does not forgo the convenience of speaking by telephone, traveling by air, or keeping his fruit fresh in his refrigerator.

For centuries people have been so blind and ignorant that they have always regarded the eating of cooked meals as a natural operation. And now, when for the first time they hear about raw eating, they regard it as something strange and curious, whereas in reality it is precisely the degeneration of natural foodstuffs by means of cooking that is most unnatural, strange, and curious and which must be recorded in history as the greatest folly committed by humans.

### **Cooked Eating and Drug Therapy Are Leading the Human Race to Utter Annihilation**

Many species of mammoth animals once inhabited this earth and have since met with complete extinction. Nowadays, it is with his own hands that man is creating

such adverse conditions as will one day extirpate him from the face of this earth. Paralleled with the process of the degeneration of foodstuffs, there is an increase in the variety and frequency of various diseases. Before the passing of many more generations, people will die of cardiovascular diseases or of cancer prior to reaching the age of puberty and having the opportunity to develop their procreative faculties. On the basis of the alarming speed at which those diseases have increased during the last few decades, it is easy to foresee that, should humans still persist in their folly, that fateful day may not be far off.

The scientist who points out the benefits of cooked eating and drug therapy is like the merchant who, on the verge of bankruptcy, is happy counting his pennies while closing his eyes to the millions of losses that stare him in the face. The ultimate result of every business must be judged by its final balance sheet. Let us see what benefits and advantages civilized man has been able to acquire for himself by his discoveries of cookery and medicine, in comparison with those enjoyed by the myriads of different animals. Man is more subject to various illnesses than any other being.

After the discovery of the vitamins, humans should have had the sagacity to perceive at once that by means of cooking, they are destroying in natural foodstuffs those very constituents the absence of which hastens their end. He should have put an end to that waste once and for all and should have safeguarded the immunity of natural foodstuffs from degeneration. But so great is the charm of cooked food that it thwarts all such attempts at reforms. Addiction conquers science and takes it into its talons. Meanwhile, still clinging fast to cooked food,

man try to penetrate into the secrets of foodstuffs, to recognize those constituents that are destroyed in cooking and processing, and then to replace them by synthetic substances. Is it not foolishness to burn and destroy those essential constituents by one's own hands, to become ill, to stand on the brink of the grave, and then to make hopeless attempts to save oneself by deceptive means? We must bear in mind the fact that those constituents are not limited to the 40 and 50 vitamins recognized by biologists. There are so many of them that it will not be possible to form an accurate picture of their qualitative and quantitative properties for thousands of years to come. Let us suppose for a moment that one day scientists may succeed in recognizing all their varieties. Then, in order to replace by artificial means the constituents thrown out of wheat alone, thousands of prescriptions and preparations will be needed for every individual, not to speak of the prohibitive costs involved.

By the research carried out on separate varieties of fruits, vegetables, and grains, food-addicted biologists themselves prove that natural foodstuffs possess the property of curing almost every kind of disease. But people do not wish to admit that the human organism will remain free from those diseases if it is fed exclusively on natural foodstuffs from childhood onwards. Right from the beginning, the very thought of abstaining from cooked food deprives them of the ability to think clearly, and then science yields its place to addiction.

**Natural Foodstuffs Must Not Be Utilized by Doctors as Merely Temporary Therapeutic Means.**

## **They Must Be Declared As the Only Diet Suitable for the Human Being**

Many progressive doctors condemn drug therapy. Some of them are so disappointed with the inefficacious results obtained from drug treatment that they abandon medical practice and devote themselves to the study of the fundamental problems of prophylaxis. Among them is the famous Swiss physician Bircher-Benner, from whose German studies I have included several short translations in my Armenian book. At the onset of his medical career, Bircher-Benner became so disillusioned with the current methods of therapeutics that when he happened to make his acquaintance with the nutritive values of natural foodstuffs, he began to cure his patients with the help of natural nutrition, without any drugs. Very soon a great number of patients, who had been unsuccessfully treated by various doctors all over the world without any results, went to his sanatorium in Zurich and in a very short time obtained a complete cure by raw veganism.

But Bircher-Benner regarded raw foodstuffs as a "therapeutic means," not as the only diet fit for all beings. As if humans were obliged to nourish themselves on unnatural foodstuffs right from their childhood and then, having gotten ill, to be cured by the "therapeutic diet" in their advanced age. But this apparent paradox had its definite reasons. First of all, there is nobody in the world, not even the foremost expert in raw nutrition, Bircher-Benner, that realizes that cooked eating is an addiction and that the desire people feel for cooked food is neither hunger nor the biological demand of the cells.

Then, as a physician, Bircher-Benner had been trained to cure existing diseases. Nobody would have paid him any fees, or even taken him seriously, if he had publicly advocated a system of nutrition that would have kept mankind free from all disease.

At the present moment there are two opposing views on nutrition. One of them defends raw eating, the other favors cooked food; one of them advocates veganism, the other prefers an animal diet. Now science is not politics. The man who holds a wrong point of view has no right to impose his erroneous and harmful opinions on innocent children. It is the imperative demand of our times that those two viewpoints should be examined in international scientific and cultural circles so that the one that is wrong may be condemned, while the true one may be announced to the public and put into general practice.

At first sight, those simple-minded people who do not wish to penetrate the depth of the problem think that the ideal of raw eating is not something that can be realized quickly and that humans will not be too ready to abandon their deep-rooted habits. But this is the voice of addiction, not of science. Science, however, must be separated from addiction. We must first admit that raw foodstuffs are the real and complete raw materials suitable for the human organism, after which let those who wish to degenerate the raw materials of themselves and their children do so to their hearts' content.

In the first place we must make use of the experience gained from raw eating to correct at once the false notions prevalent in the science of nutrition, according

to which the most essential foodstuffs are regarded as harmful, while the really harmful ones are recommended as wholesome. It must be clearly realized that, without any exception, in all those cases where raw foodstuffs are forbidden to the weak, the sick, the sufferers from stomach disorders, and other ailments, it is precisely those forbidden foodstuffs that would heal, sustain, and strengthen the patients.

In such cases it is no longer a question of breaking off a bad habit. On the contrary, the patient now asks for fruit, but we refuse it; he feels sick of cooked food, but we persuade him to have a little more; we snatch away the fruit from the hand of a child and force some cooked meal down his throat. In other words, we hasten their ends by compelling them to eat those very foods that have been the cause of their illness and incapacity. The correction of misunderstandings of this kind alone will reduce the number of untimely deaths by 50 percent.

In order to convince ourselves of the truth of these statements, there is no other means but to put raw eating into practice for a few months, and this experiment should be tried by every sensible person. It is in this way that a final end will be put to the existing erroneous and contradictory viewpoints on nutrition.

In the light of raw eating, the basic principles of nutrition no longer remain confined to universities and research institutes; rather, they become matters of primary importance to all mankind. For normal people, the scientific names of thousands of foodstuffs, their complicated formulae, and the long, tiresome descriptions of their nutritive properties and supposed



benefits can be summed up in three words only: RAW VEGAN FOOD, or the complete raw material for the human body.

Thus, raw eating becomes an ideal apart from the science of medicine, an ideal that is explainable not by scientific formulae but by logic, its proofs being the irrefutable laws of nature and the basic results obtained from basic experience.

### **We Must Never Upset the Integrity of the Human Raw Materials**

The human body is a complicated factory. It may be still more appropriately regarded as a huge world of factories and systems in the sense that every cell taken separately is in itself a complicated factory, which, in its own turn, consists of numerous other factories. Up to the present, research scientists have been able to discover as many as ten thousand parts in each cell. Every gland or organ is composed of billions of such cells, and it is from the combination of those glands, organs, systems, skeleton, and skin that the human body is formed.

In order that they may carry out their functions properly, these highly complicated factories and systems must be provided with raw materials containing tens of thousands of different substances, each of which has its special duty to perform in the general organization of the human organism. All those substances are constructed with the help of sunlight and are concentrated in plants. For instance, a seed, a leaf, or a grain of corn contains in itself all those nutritive constituents that are essential to an animal

organism. Now, although those constituents differ in various plants as regards to their composition and arrangement, this does not matter much, because after their introduction into the organism they are broken down and synthesized again, during which process one substance is changed into another substance. Thus, the organism is able to change the quantities of the various constituents according to its needs, but in the absence of a certain chemical element, it cannot bring that missing element into being inside the organism or substitute it with another element.

For instance, it has not been possible to discover in the laboratory any massive concentrations of calcium, vitamins, or proteins in clover, yet it is from clover and from still commoner grasses that animals take all their vitamins and mineral salts and construct their massive bones, flesh, and fat. In other words, in place of the milk, the butter, the cheese, the brains, the liver, and the meat that short-sighted people recommend as sources of calcium, phosphorus, vitamins, and "fully balanced" proteins, clover alone may be recommended, for it is from clover that all those substances originate. Therefore, it is completely meaningless, worthless, and even harmful to claim that such-and-such a foodstuff is rich in a certain vitamin, while another abounds in a particular mineral, because, apart from misleading and confusing people, such claims do not serve any useful purpose.

The main functions of nutritive constituents in the organism are threefold. First of all, they serve as building material for the construction and renewal of cells; then they produce the necessary energy for putting those cells into motion and giving warmth to the

body, and lastly, they supply the specialized cells with the raw materials needed for their productive activities.

It is imperative that we should look after our organism with the same care as a manufacturer looks after his factory. Accordingly, for the operation of the foregoing threefold functions, we must supply our bodies with all the necessary nutritive constituents as an integral whole and in the same balanced proportions as nature presents them to us. Otherwise, should there be a deficiency in any of the constituents, this fact will inevitably have an adverse effect on the construction and working of the organism.

But how does the civilized man of today treat his own body? He dissipates, burns, kills, and upsets the integrity of his raw materials, and then he fills his stomach at random with the dead and poisonous corpses. In this way, his consumption of a certain constituent may exceed the normal requirements of his organism by hundreds of times, with a corresponding deficiency in the intake of some other constituent. Out of cooked meat, white bread, macaroni, rice, sweets, clarified butter, and margarine are produced incapable, parasitic cells of a quite simple structure, under the weight of which the food addict stoops. Research scientists can easily prove that 50, 100, or 200 years ago human indispositions were mostly accompanied by excessive thinness. In those days, man had a greater power of resistance, and the human body was able to withstand unnatural foodstuffs and to prevent the introduction of inordinate quantities of such substances by loss of appetite, diarrhea, vomiting, and other such means. However, in course of time the human organism yields to the pressure of degenerated foodstuffs,

"adopts" itself to them, and allows unceasing plumpness of their babies and the chubbiness of their faces. These people became the first to construct and then to sustain simple, worthless, inactive cells corresponding to their own structure. That is why nowadays thinness is less common, and the world is filled with the ugly, unnatural, and corpulent.

Today, many children are born with a terrible burden of worthless and inactive cells. Their simple-minded parents are proud of the plumpness of their babies and the chubbiness of their faces. Sometimes this plumpness is of such enormous dimensions that it terrifies those who understand its true nature. Yet, foolish people represent those monstrosities on their packages of baby foods as sure signs of good health.

The human organism makes great efforts to keep under some control the inordinate increase of the parasitic and useless cells by distributing them over all the free parts of the body: at the upper and lower extremities, round the chin, under the skin of the belly and the hips, and elsewhere. It so happens, however, that occasionally some of those cells manage to shake off that control, to separate themselves from communal life, to become independent, to start an individual existence, and to multiply without limit. Very often the organism succeeds in keeping groups of those cells enveloped at one spot and prevents them from spreading. The resulting growth is then called a "benign neoplasm" or "benign tumor," and it must be distinguished from that growth which branches off freely to the different parts of the body in order to thrive on proteins (and especially animal proteins), and

which is known as a "malignant neoplasm" or simply as cancer.

It is necessary to emphasize the fact that cooking is not the only factor that causes a loss in the nutritive value of foodstuffs. White flour and polished rice are harmful foodstuffs even when they are eaten raw. Even dried straw is not a perfect foodstuff, in spite of the fact that it is able to keep a living creature alive. The perfect foodstuff could be the stalk of the wheat along with the ear if it is eaten green in the summer and dry in the winter. For the cow and the sheep, the common grass on the mountain cannot be regarded as perfect food. Those animals have gone through their evolution in free nature, feeding simultaneously on grasses, leaves, fruits, and vegetables. That is why particular cases of diseases occur among those animals that have been denied, through the intervention of man, the foodstuffs proper to the requirements of their cells. Nevertheless, at no time are the organs of animals feeding on the commonest grasses subject to such perils as man's are, nor are microbes of such terror to them as they are to us, for the simple reason that they have no kitchen. Should it not be possible to confer on the cancer cells the high qualities possessed by normal cells and to return them to the bosom of the community by the consumption of fruits, which are indeed poor in proteins but rich in vitamins and other constituents of the highest nutritive value, then no drug on earth will ever be able to perform that task. All attempts to cure cancer by means of medicines and operations are absolutely futile and are doomed to utter failure. But a prudent man should never suffer from cancer if he does not upset the integrity of his raw materials.

Thus, the cells that are produced from chicken and rice, soup, broiled liver, bread and butter, honey, jam, and sweets are devoid of the capacity to perform any useful work. The active, specialized, and completely healthy cells of the human body are born exclusively of raw fruits and vegetables; in other words, of those proteins that introduce into the human body thousands of different nutritive constituents in their natural and living state, and that the food addict deigns to eat sometimes as a sort of "non-nutritive" luxury. Everybody should now be able to realize the enormity of the crime committed by the parent who tells her child not to spoil his appetite with fruit before dinner because he must have his meal soon. This is tantamount to telling him not to eat the thousands of different raw materials that are essential for his organism in their natural and living state but to wait for the dead and lifeless corpses of a few of them, which she is going to give him soon in the form of a meal.

Cooked-food eaters are happy at the thought that the foods that they consume are rich in calories. Now, calories can be useful only when full advantage is taken of them. When the number of muscular cells is small, and even those are weak, diseased, and devoid of elasticity, the greater part of the calories remain unused and, after causing a considerable amount of trouble to the body, leave the organism in the form of unwanted heat and are lost to no purpose. When we light a fire in the open air, the energy of that fire is uselessly lost, but when we burn that fire in the motor of a factory, it fully serves its purpose. By means of cooked foods, the food addict introduces into his body an intake of calories three or four times in excess of the functional requirements of his organism. The calories

that are obtained from raw foodstuffs fully serve their purpose, because such foodstuffs are accompanied by all the factors necessary for the utilization of those calories.

It should be the duty of biologists and doctors to encourage people not to separate the nutritive constituents from one another but always to consume them together, in their naturally balanced proportions and with their living cells. They should never talk about the usefulness of individual nutritive constituents but should emphasize their indispensability, just as we regard the purity of petrol not as merely useful for the airplane but as indispensable. They should never speak about the benefits of any particular vitamins but should lay stress on the dangers of upsetting their integrity and of destroying them.

Generally speaking, the whole science of nutrition may be summarized in two main points and made the concern of all mankind:

1. Human nourishment should consist entirely of living cells. Only those foodstuffs that consist of living cells have all the qualities necessary to satisfy the demands of the human organism. Humans are not necrophagous. He could no more be carnivorous than catch a fly in the air and swallow it alive or tear prey to pieces like a wild beast and devour it with all its entrails and bones to boot.
2. There are both common and choice vegetable bodies in nature. The most perfect and highly nourishing vegetable bodies are the better

varieties of fruits, green vegetables, cereals, and roots.

By eating cooked food, man closes his appetite with three or four varieties of degenerated substances and deprives his organism of the thousands of other essential constituents. A striking proof of this assertion is the fact that among thousands of medical prescriptions it is hard to find one in which some vitamin or other is not specified, but you will scarcely meet a prescription where the names of proteins, fats, and carbohydrates are mentioned.

In short, man enjoys perfect health when he feeds solely on raw vegan foodstuffs, he is ill to the extent that he consumes cooked food, and he dies when he subsists exclusively on such a diet.

### **How Diseases Are Born**

Let us take a gland that is composed of billions of cells. These cells are of numerous kinds, each of which has its particular function or duty to perform. Thus, there are muscular cells and epithelial cells, and there are nerve cells and cells for a great many other purposes. But the main function of the cells of any given gland is the secretion of fluids.

The glands of a man who eats cooked food have their full complement of cells, perhaps even more, but only a quarter or a fifth of them are fit for any useful work, and



that not quite adequately. Protein alone, especially the dead animal protein, which is regarded by shortsighted people as the perfect building material, can at most call into existence only the simplest structure of a shapeless, incapable, and useless cell of a primitive type. In their structure, these cells resemble those primitive organisms of the most elementary character that made their first appearance on the earth in the earliest stages of evolutionary development and that were constructed with the commonest building material: proteins, fats, and carbohydrates.

In the course of the ensuing millions of centuries, however, those primitive unicellular organisms have undergone a long evolutionary process with the help of nutritive substances of the highest quality, namely the vitamins and the minerals known and unknown to us. During that evolution they developed and have given birth to various more complex organisms. We can see the brief recapitulation of this historic development of the organisms in the embryo of an animal, from the moment of its fertilization to its full development. The same process is repeated during the development of the individual human cells.

In a given gland, every specialized cell possesses particular mechanisms, which can only be organized and made to acquire the capacity for active work by the supply of special nutritive constituents. Now, the raw materials necessary for the productive functions of those mechanisms can be provided solely by raw foodstuffs. No bee can make honey from the nectar of cooked flowers!

When the special constituents do not reach the cell in sufficient quantities, its development slows down, or it may even stop. This gives rise to a variety of diseased cells, such as fatty, anaplastic, malignant, or cancer cells, macrophages, megakaryocytes, polykaryocytes, and so on.

Thus, not only do most of the cells of the gland in question not attain specialization (differentiation), but also the raw materials necessary for the secretion of fluids do not reach the few cells that still retain the ability to work, as a result of which the gland is not able to maintain its proper level of production. It is in this way that the gland is affected with disease. Unsatisfactory development and improper functioning of the cells may also occur in all other organs and systems, resulting in the appearance of corresponding diseases.

Sometimes a certain gland or organ is damaged to such an extent that its removal becomes unavoidable. Instead of adopting the most natural measures to prevent the destruction of that organ in the first place, humans take the greatest trouble to remove it and then pride themselves on the performance of such a miracle. To a raw vegan person it is quite clear that no drugs can restore a degenerated cell to its normal condition and return to it its proper capacity for work.

The raw-eater has no fear of microbes, because he is protected against them by natural forces. Microbes cannot harm the fully developed and specialized (differentiated) cells. They spread their ravages on the weak and delicate cells.

In reality the cooked-food eater owes his existence to those few raw nutrients that he sometimes eats merely for pleasure, without taking into consideration their full importance. Now, because the human organism can maintain its existence on an unbelievably small quantity of nourishment, those small amounts of raw nutrients suffice to keep him alive for some time.

Today, even the greatest nutrition experts usually consider putrefaction and contamination to be the only defects of foodstuffs. They regard as nutritious, wholesome, and normal all those foods that are fresh, clean, and "well-cooked." The absence of thousands of essential constituents in them does not seem to worry them at all. When they are reminded about it, they reply that they eat fruit, too. This is a most senseless reply. The diseases of the human organism originate from the very fact that we separate the nutritive constituents from one another and then consume them separately, as it were by chance, without any proper plan.

The nutritive value of foodstuffs must be sought not in the variety of foods consumed but in the variety of the constituents composing those foodstuffs. The commonest grass, in itself, is richer in the quantity of its nutritive constituents than the whole collection of the multitude of dishes served in the most sumptuous of banquets. This is the verdict of science.

Numerous medical conferences take place for the prevention of diseases where, after discoursing for hours upon secondary subjects, the foremost representatives of medical science gather round richly decorated tables for their dinners. Then, ignoring the basic and fully balanced foodstuffs, which are formed in

the wonderful laboratory of nature for the prevention of diseases and which comprise thousands of living substances, they fill themselves through dishes with the degenerated and dead corpses. Worse still, many of them, regarding natural nutrients as not quite essential, complete their program of nutrition with coffee and cigarettes. Let doctors excuse me for this stricture, but after a little contemplation they must surely agree with me that this is not the right system of nutrition and that it is high time they seriously considered making a basic change in the present erroneous customs of feeding.

At one time in certain Asiatic countries, criminals who were condemned to death were fed on a diet of cooked meat alone. They usually died within 28-30 days, whereas in the event of complete starvation a man may remain alive for as long as 70 days. This means that not only is cooked meat a poor foodstuff, but, with the toxins that it produces, it is really a poison that kills a person in a relatively short time.

It is generally known that people who consume an excessive amount of polished rice are subject to beriberi, which kills the patient after causing a great deal of suffering. Now perhaps the most important symptom of beriberi is polyneuritis, but this is not the only symptom of the disease; it is merely one of a great number of symptoms. Nor is deficiency of vitamin B1 the only cause of this disease, as it is generally supposed. Polished rice does not contain any of the known or unknown vitamins. White bread and, in general, all the preparations from white flour have exactly the same characteristics as polished rice. The same is true of artificial sugar and clarified fats, which

are the representatives of only one or the other of the thousands of nutritive constituents.

The above foodstuffs, which form the staple diet of the cooked-eater, are the main factors that cause death; only they kill a person under the guise of diarrhea, infectious diseases, rheumatism, gout, sclerosis, diabetes, apoplexy, cancer, and numerous other diseases. Sometimes they kill at the age of only a year; at other times at the age of five, 10, 50, or 70, depending on the relative proportions of the two categories of foodstuffs consumed (cooked foods and raw nutriment) and the degree of hereditary resistance transmitted to the individual.

As a result of faulty nutrition, nowadays many mothers have no milk to nurse their babies, and so some of them feed their infants dried milk, biscuits, white bread, and tea. Quite naturally the child begins to become wasted and emaciated. The children's hospitals and orphanages of the world are full of such patients.

It is sufficient to give such children only two tumblers of fruit juice daily in order that they may completely regain their health in a fortnight. But food-addicted dieticians, ignoring the necessity of fruit, carry out all sorts of painful experiments on the wasted body of the child, and after drawing out the last drops of blood from it, they try to nourish him with dried milk, meat extracts, artificial vitamins, and various drugs. In other words, disregarding the harmonious balance of the nutritional constituents liberally provided by nature, they begin to make experiments on the emaciated body of that child by means of a few constituents about which they have obtained some fragmentary knowledge in

their laboratories. If that child does not obtain any natural foodstuffs somehow or other, he will certainly die, and such deaths, indeed, occur in thousands. But, what is still more terrible, many naive dieticians do not permit such children to eat raw fruit in the belief that their weak stomachs will not be able to digest it, or, at best, they leave the question of fruit to the discretion of the children's parents, regarding it as an unnecessary luxury of minor importance. Witness the fact that in many hospitals you will find meat, biscuits, dried milk, sugar, tea, margarine, rice, white bread, artificial vitamins, and medicines as much as you like, but you will not see a single device for squeezing out fruit juices, and the purchase of fruit is not even compulsory. Dozens of children's corpses are taken out of such hospitals, but nobody wishes to hold the unnatural system of nutrition responsible for those deaths.

I appeal to the humanitarian feelings of all doctors. Let them give serious consideration to this matter. I ask all university lecturers and all responsible bodies and health ministries of every country in the world whether they are anxious for the health and well-being of their people or not. If they are, they must set to work without delay. My statements are not mere hypotheses, but irrefutable facts, which I present to the reader not as a result of experiments on guinea pigs, but by the living example of my family and myself.

The best means of preventing and curing illnesses and at the same time of raising the standard of living is for every ministry of health to set aside a negligible budget for the establishment of information departments, with the express purpose of bringing to the notice of the masses the harm done by cooking, as

well as by foodstuffs that lack vitamins, especially white bread, rice, meat, clarified fats, sugar, tea, coffee, and alcoholic and non-alcoholic drinks. They should then persuade people to reduce the consumption of cooked food as far as possible and to introduce gradual changes into their nutritional habits.

Naturally, as all humans are not sensible, it is not possible to make everybody a raw-eater all at once, but it is essential that people should become acquainted with the proper raw materials of their bodies right from their infancy, should free themselves from erroneous and dangerous prejudices, and should realize that it is not chicken soup, rice, cutlets, eggs, and beefsteak that give them and their children health and strength, but sprouted wheat, carrots, tomatoes, nuts, grapes, etc. Taking my own case as an example, as a result of eating meat and other cooked foods for 52 years, I had lost all my strength and could not go up two steps without feeling breathless; but today, after abstaining from cooked food for eight years, I can run up mountains with the utmost ease.

I do not know on what scientific grounds nowadays at a great many children's homes and day nurseries they place boxes of biscuits at the disposal of the children, to help themselves whenever they wish. The boxes of those pernicious substances should be replaced by baskets of fresh fruit, carrots, cucumbers, and tomatoes in the summer and of dried fruit in the winter, from which children should be allowed to eat freely and as much as they like at all hours of the day. Then everybody will see how, by the very laws of nature, children will automatically begin to consume

fruits instead of degenerated food, thus assuring their own health by their own hands.

The raw-eating system should be adopted in hospitals for all kinds of patients, and the public should be informed of the results obtained. Very useful reforms may be made in public restaurants. Without completely depriving the food addicts of the "pleasures" of cooked meals, deadly as they are, for the time being, it is possible to reduce their quantity by at least 50 percent and replace the loss with fresh salads and raw compotes and with the numerous varieties of the fruits of the season. In this way, not only will meals become more varied and pleasant, but the health of the people will be fortified too, and a considerable saving will be effected in public economy.

Once the public is acquainted with the harms done by cooked foods, they will try to avoid them. There will be found, also, a great number of sensible people who, drowning the voice of their addiction, will follow our example and, by the practice of complete raw eating, will assure the perfect health of themselves and their families. People who have lost all hope of recovery or who have become disfigured by unnatural corpulence will realize that, by a strict observance of raw eating, within only a few months they will be able to attain the health that they have always dreamed of.

People publish numerous books to demonstrate the therapeutic properties of separate fruits and vegetables, such as grapes, dates, apples, oranges, onions, or radishes, and by developing special methods of consuming them, they try to invest those operations with the semblance of scientific proceedings. In point of



fact, all edible varieties of raw plants are perfect nutriments and have the same qualities. No matter from what disease a person suffers, they satisfy the demands of the organism, they regulate the functions of the organs, and they restore the health of the patient. Information about such truths should be placed at the disposal of the public free of cost, as it is inhumane to receive any money for such advice.

The dietetics of a cooked-food eater is full of fatal contradictions. In a great many cases harmful foodstuffs are recommended as useful, while quite essential ones are represented as harmful and are strictly forbidden. This is because the experience of cooked-food eaters is based on the immediate, apparent, and contradictory effects of foodstuffs and on the erroneous calculations made in the laboratory. Millions of innocent people perish as a result of those contradictory and erroneous calculations.

The most reliable guide is the fundamental and perfect experience of the raw-eater, as a result of which all the errors, contradictions, and misunderstandings that exist in medical science, in general, and in dietetics, in particular, are brought to light and corrected once and for all. It is necessary to multiply the examples of that experience far and wide and to acquaint all mankind with the results obtained.

**It is the worst of crimes to accustom a newborn baby to cooked stuff**

When it becomes apparent to everybody that cooked-eating is an unnatural habit, that it is the cause of all human illnesses, and that it is such a terrible addiction

that once a man falls prey to its remorseless grip, the victim is seldom able to free himself from its clutches again. What right has a sensible person to introduce it into the organism of an innocent newborn child by her very own hands? What right has she to ravage the organs of her little baby with foods that have been burned, destroyed, or killed on the fire? Is it not the most ruthless of all crimes? Is it not in effect a homicide, a brutal filicide? I myself have killed my two beloved children by my own hands in that way, and I am quite aware of the enormity of the crime.

In reality, all food-addicted parents are filicides. In the present century nobody dies a natural death. All deaths are the result of diseases that are caused by cooked meals, and the people who teach children to eat cooked food are their parents. Cooked-eater parents must fully realize that the responsibility for every illness and disorder in their children rests squarely on their own shoulders. They must weigh up this matter most seriously before persisting in their usual mistaken course. The foundation of every cancer or heart stroke is laid with the first morsel of cooked food given to the baby, even when the disease makes its appearance at a most advanced age.

It may be argued that it is difficult for grown-up people to be completely deprived of cooked food. Very well then, in that case let them persist in their pernicious habits to their hearts' content. But what is it that compels them to burn the integral raw materials of an infant child, to destroy, to deprive them of their most essential constituents, to convert them into harmful substances, and then to give them to the baby? This

inhuman behavior towards innocent children, this barbarism, must surely cease.

There is no rule of science that prevents a parent from giving her child sprouted wheat instead of white bread, polished rice, or macaroni; fresh juices of carrots, oranges, grapes, and apples instead of dried milk; raw fruit instead of compote; and walnuts, almonds, sprouted beans, and peas instead of meat and fats. By eating raw food the child enjoys a healthy, happy, long life, whereas the alternative diet leads him to disease and untimely death. You may rest assured that the child desires raw food with all his soul. He demands that he should receive his raw materials in their intact state, and he has an indisputable right to them. The doctor or the parent who is not devoid of common sense and conscience must act accordingly, without the least hesitation.

When at the age of three or four months the organs of a baby begin to operate irregularly, the shortsighted doctor prescribes two or three kinds of artificial vitamins in place of the thousands of substances that have been burned over the fire, or at most he recommends, as a sort of medicine, a few measured spoonfuls of fruit juice, thus setting at rest both his own conscience and that of the baby's parents. Why should a child suffer from vitamin deficiency if, by her very hands, her mother does not destroy the vitamins that exist in natural foodstuffs?

Let us close our eyes for a moment and picture to ourselves in all its entirety the miracle that nature performs. As soon as we introduce a single grain of wheat into the human body factory through the mouth,

the organism takes that grain, breaks it down, and distributes it throughout the body. The thousands of different substances that are concentrated in that grain move in all directions, and each of them goes to perform its respective duty. Thus, the various nutritive constituents in a grain of wheat perform tens of thousands of different tasks and conduct the biological functions of the organism without any fault or flaw.

But what happens when we introduce into the stomach a morsel of white bread? It aimlessly sets the stomach to work; it is burned and turned into useless heat, or, at best, it goes to add a few mortarless bricks or stones on some indolent, worthless cells. The heart of a man who feeds on pure wheat is as firm and strong as a grain of corn, while the heart of a person who eats the white bread is as weak and friable as the bread that he consumes. To this, bear witness to the ever-increasing number of heart failures.

Should, by some miracle, the whole world come to its senses today and adopt the practice of raw eating, with the exception of some particular cases far too advanced in their diseases, there will be no untimely deaths during the next three or four decades, until elderly people reach extreme old age. As it is, deaths caused by cooked eating exceed several times those incurred in the greatest of wars.

In the name of every helpless child, I again appeal to all scientists, men of learning, leaders of nations, ministries of health, parents, and kind-hearted people throughout the world to put an immediate end to that terrible crime against little children. Every day's delay costs thousands of innocent lives. Grown-up people are

free to sacrifice their lives to the fatal pleasures of cooked foods and thus to commit suicide, but who has given them the right to massacre their poor children, especially as those foods, far from giving them any pleasure, merely fill the children with disgust? It is senseless to argue that when a child grows up, he will see others eat, and then he himself will feel a desire to eat. First of all, a barbarism such as cooked-eating cannot last long, and we may confidently look forward to the early victory of raw-eating. Then there are millions of people who see the alcoholism or the drug addiction of others but keep themselves well away from such vices. My child is already 6 years old (*this refers to 1963, when this section of the book was written*), and she can understand everything; she sees the cooked food eaten by other people, but she herself loathes it with all her soul. Which opium addict teaches his infant child to acquire the drug habit right from the cradle? Which common sense prompts a man to sacrifice his own son and make him an early companion to his loathsome habits in order to sanction and perpetuate his personal addictions? Let parents first bring up a healthy child according to the laws of nature, and then, after he is grown up, let them leave his future course of action to his own free will, just as they do in the case of all other vices.

After reading these lines no sensible parent can find justification in the fact that other authorities have given quite different advice. Should she persist in ignoring the voice of truth, she must take on her shoulders the responsibility for ruining her child's health and undermining his future. A person must be devoid of the most elementary judgment to replace 10,000 substances by zero substances, living cells by dead

cells, fully balanced raw materials by degenerated material, natural nutriments by unnatural nutriments, sprouted wheat by white bread, green peas by meat, and fresh fruit by jam.

**Gastrolatrous Biologists Must Prove That  
Nature Has Made a Mistake in Not Presenting Us  
with Foodstuffs in a Cooked State**

I publicly appeal to all scientists either to confirm my views and declare them to the whole world or to prove that when natural foodstuffs are put on the fire, no losses are incurred in their nutritive constituents or energy contents; no deaths occur of the living vegetable cells, and no changes take place in the constitution of the atoms. They must further prove that in the creation of nutrients for the human organism, nature has made a mistake in not presenting them to us with the foodstuffs in a "purified," cooked, or burned state; that the operations carried out in factories and in kitchens are scientific measures aimed at correcting the errors of nature; and that the artificial man-made vitamins have greater nutritional values than the vitamins found in nature. Failing that, they must admit the tragic mistakes that have been made hitherto, and, doing away with cooked meals once and for all, they must take refuge in the wisdom of the universe and stop interfering with the composition of the natural foodstuffs created by Earth's nature. Let those who regard themselves as meat-eaters consume their meat, if they can, fresh and entire, like carnivorous beasts do, without killing its cells or degenerating it in any way.

We have no right to upset the integrity of the raw materials created by nature for the human organism

when, with all the scientific means at our disposal, we are not able to create the tiniest single-celled organism; when, with the help of all the nutritive constituents known to us, we cannot feed an organism artificially and keep it alive for long; and when we have barely succeeded in recognizing a thousandth part of the substances in a grain of corn. It is true that a great deal of research has been carried out and considerable progress has been made on the recognition of various nutrients, and as a result, many important nutritive constituents have been discovered, but all those discoveries cannot be of greater significance than the invention of the artificial satellites. The difference between artificial vitamins and the nutritive constituents composing a grain of corn is of the same order as the difference between man-made artificial satellites and the celestial bodies forming our whole galactic system. The scientists who make artificial satellites, however, never presume to annihilate the existing galaxies and replace them with interstellar bodies newly created by themselves.

Our best course is to study carefully the laws of the natural evolution of animal and vegetable organisms. But, under no circumstance, must we undo the work of nature and then try to reconstruct it with the help of miserable gland extracts and artificial vitamins.

When we place a piece of potato or marrow in butter and begin to fry it, we start the process of its destruction right from the first moment. It immediately begins to sizzle, to shrivel, to become brown, and then to dry up, and if we continue the operation a little longer, it chars up and turns into mean ashes. That appetizing smell that tickles our nostrils is the smell of

the most valuable constituents of natural foodstuffs, which laugh at our senses and vanish into thin air.

The terms "cooking" and "baking" must not be used in the sense of preparing, constructing, and improving, as they have been used until now; they must be employed, rather, to convey the sense of ruining, destroying, burning, killing, or annihilating, because by those operations we destroy the most valuable substances that are of vital importance to our organism, and thus we commit the most heinous crime against humanity.

### **A Baby Detests the Taste of Cooked Foods, Which Appear Appetizing Only to the Food Addict, Just As Opium Seems Pleasing to the Drug Addict**

Simple-minded people might think that it would be cruel to deprive children of the pleasure derived from the taste of cooked foods. Such people should realize that, in point of fact, cooked foods are not tasty at all; they seem tasty only to the food addict, just as opium seems pleasing to the drug addict. Until now there has been nobody to tell us this simple truth, because from time immemorial nobody has been free from food addiction.

The organs of a newborn child are adapted to the composition of raw foodstuffs only. The baby greatly enjoys raw fruit and vegetables. He eats, with the greatest satisfaction, raw grains, potatoes, beans, aubergine, green peas, and lentils, which taste very good to him but are distasteful to a cooked-food eater.



The little child does not derive any pleasure whatsoever from the taste of cooked meals; he loathes and shuns them with all his soul, and it is with great pain that he swallows those unnatural foods. But the poor, simpleminded parent does not understand this. She is guided solely by her own addiction, and in her anxiety to feed the child well, she keeps on forcing those vile foods down his throat to such an extent that she turns the child into a perfect addict, thus ruining his health and happiness.

During the first few years of his life, the baby carries on a terrible struggle against unnatural foodstuffs. This is evident from the numerous children's ailments and the frequent stomach disorders with which children are afflicted, as well as from the high rate of infantile mortality. A baby is a newly constructed, perfect factory. He will never become ill if we supply natural nutrients for the normal nutritional activities of his organs.

The universal adoption of raw-veganism is the only way to free all mankind from the curse of illnesses once and for all. The propagation of raw eating must begin with sick people, newborn children, people endowed with the necessary willpower and wisdom, and the sensible parents of raw-eating children, who will be obliged to exclude from their homes all traces of debased food so as not to put temptation in their children's way. This initial period of voluntary abstention from cooked food will last until the day when the authorities will come to their senses and will resolve to declare raw eating compulsory, thus enforcing the prudent will of nature upon the ignorant, uninstructed masses. The time will come when raw eating will prevail

in the whole world. In that blessed future, cooking will be known as a crime.

The supposed difficulty of abolishing the cooked-eating habit quickly must not serve as an excuse for denying the harm done by it. Nobody tries to justify theft, robbery, and murder, although it has not been possible to eradicate these baneful plagues from human society. The essential point is for scientists to admit in principle and to declare to the public that the operation of cooking foodstuffs is wrong, unnatural, and dangerous, and that it is the direct cause of illnesses. The secondary question of putting raw eating into actual practice may then be left to the subsequent course of events.

Cooked eating has successively given birth to food addiction, diseases, medical science, and pharmacology. The ultimate purpose of medical science is to mend and renovate the degenerated and mangled organs of humans. In place of medical science, the raw-eater has his science or health, the aim of which is to prevent the degenerations mentioned above and to ensure a healthy, happy, long, and peaceful life for present and future generations. All diseases are caused by the violation of the laws of nature. Raw eating compels people to respect those laws.

### **The Practice of Raw Eating in My Family**

The fact that at the age of 60 I am able to write these lines is due to raw eating. Seven or eight years ago my heart was in such poor condition that a heart stroke seemed inevitable. I used to get breathless climbing a few steps; I did not have enough strength to lift a

bucket of water. Constipation, indigestion, heartburn, insomnia, headache, piles, gout, sclerosis, high blood pressure, tachycardia, chronic bronchitis, hemorrhoids, and frequent colds had been the companions of my life for a long time past. Thanks to raw eating, I have gotten rid of all those disorders. I have permanently lowered my blood pressure from 18-20 to 13 and my pulse rate from 80-90 to 58-60. Without any sign of fatigue, I can walk to Tajrish and back (a distance of 24 kilometers) in four hours, climb up mountains like a goat, and lift heavy suitcases up the staircase, and when I have time, I take a stroll of 12 kilometers as an ordinary daily routine. I, who at one time suffered from chronic bronchitis and was laid up with influenza several times a year as a matter of course, have not even had a common cold in the last few years and have slept in the open air all year round in winter and in summer, without the least fear of either cold or microbes.

Years ago, I had such a severe attack of gout that I could not touch the joints of my big toe; today I can twist them with all my might without the least sign of pain. Where in the world have similar results been obtained by means of atophan, ACTH, digitalis, bromides, iodine, aspirin, antibiotics, and thousands of other medicines?

The heart that works at the rate of 58 beats a minute can be confidently expected to carry on working for a great many years without ever being subject to the danger of a stroke. Under cooked-eating conditions, such as a fall in the pulse rate, it occurs only when the heart is weak, but in my case it is the natural result of the regularity in the operation of my digestive organs.

It is extremely significant that whenever I try to overload my stomach with several times the normal quantity of natural foodstuffs, they do not stay in the stomach for long but pass into the intestines at once and leave the body in a few hours, without undergoing any decomposition and without producing the slightest digestive disorders or causing me any discomfort whatsoever. Under this condition, my pulse rate is increased by no more than four or five beats a minute, whereas when I try to "satisfy" myself with cooked food like "an ordinary human being," my heartbeats immediately jump up to 85-90, and it takes days for my stomach to regain its normal feeling of lightness.

Along with myself, I am bringing up my third child as a raw eater. She is already a little lass of seven years of age, but she has never put a single morsel of degenerated food into her mouth. Her health is the embodiment of perfection. I can now see what a great difference there is between raw-eater and cooked-eater children. It is easier to bring up a hundred raw-eater children than a single cooked-eater child. One never has the occasion to worry about children's ailments such as chills and colds, diarrhea and constipation, or trouble about the child's eating too much or too little. She is as cheerful as a lark, and whenever she wishes, she goes to the table and helps herself to anything that she likes to eat. She plays, sings, and dances all day long without any whims or caprices, without crying, and without causing trouble to those around her. She goes to bed at exactly 8 o'clock in the evening, and after singing to herself for a few minutes, she closes her eyes and sleeps like a top until 6 o'clock in the morning. Moreover, it is a most remarkable fact that after the first few months we can remember only three or four

occasions when she has woken up during the night. So deep and sound is her sleep that no noise or movement causes her to wake up.

When other children in the kindergarten sit at their breakfast table to have bread and cheese, bread and butter, pastries, etc., she brings out her bag of fruit that she has taken from home and enjoys it quietly. When we are on a visit to friends, she looks with complete indifference at those overloaded tea tables round which people seat themselves and "enjoy" all kinds of pastries and sweets. She never expresses a wish, not even out of curiosity, to taste any of them. It is in this way that all raw-eating children should be brought up.

My wife, upon whom I have never forced my views, gradually changed her system of nutrition for the sake of her child and her health and has now become a complete raw eater and is quite content with her condition. To begin with, she gave up meat altogether, and then she reduced meatless cooked dishes to one or two a week. As the child grew up a little more, these were replaced by a few boiled potatoes taken occasionally. Finally, these too were entirely given up when one day the child asked, "What is that nasty smell from, Mommy?" After that she took only a thin slice of wholemeal bread, which she sometimes ate with walnuts, unseen by the child.\* Today, she sees the wonderful effect of raw eating on her organism, and it is not surprising, therefore, that she abstains from all cooked foodstuffs. And all this was accomplished without much difficulty, once the decision was made in earnest. When there is no smell of cooked food in the house, raw eating becomes a very simple matter. This is

the way that should be followed by all those parents who value their health and love their children.

### **All the evil habits of man are the result of cooked eating**

Raw eating will drive out of the arena all other vices such as alcoholism, tobacco smoking, drug addiction, and avarice. These addictions can no longer accompany raw eating. These vices are the satellites of food addiction.

By the victory of raw eating, lasting peace will be finally established in the world and between nations. All crimes, hatred, enmity, arrogance, jealousy, and, in general, all the evil habits of man are the offspring of cooked eating. By the abolition of cooked eating, the passions of humans will calm down, their minds will be ennobled, and life will become so easy that humans will no longer be obliged to tear each other's flesh or sell their conscience for a mess of pottage.

### **The Conception of Diet Should Be Limited to the Replacement of Unnatural Nutrition by the Natural Method of Feeding**

Complete raw eating is the only way to free mankind from diseases. Half-measures have never given and will never give any results. Under the present conditions of cooked eating, all the accepted calculations of the nutritive values of specific diets must be treated as of no account. No matter what the illness is, when the question of diet is being discussed, we must think only in terms of the raw and the cooked, the natural and the unnatural, and the pure and the degenerate. The

recommendations made every day on the radio, in the newspapers, and by various other means on the use of specific vitamins, minerals, and proteins, and the information given on their calorie values, are wholly impracticable, worthless, and dangerous, especially when they are based on the use of drugs and animal foodstuffs.

In considering the properties of individual nutritive substances, we must not worry ourselves at all as to what particular vitamins or other constituents exist in a particular nutriment. It is the invariable presence of all the various constituents in every mouthful of food that must be compulsory. We must, therefore, take care that none of the constituents are absent from the food that we consume. This is the case when we eat any raw vegetable foodstuff, whereas in cooked food they are absent in their thousands.

For centuries on end, thousands of specialists have made dietetics their particular study. But as they have paid attention to secondary problems only and have not taken into consideration the damage done by the kitchen fire, their research has failed to produce the desired results and, worse still, because of their numerous contradictions, they have been disastrous for mankind. Even the vegetarians, who may be regarded as the most progressive among them, have not only tolerated the damage done by the fire, but they have also put up with the use of white bread and refined sugar, which are devoid of all valuable constituents. Nevertheless, it must be confessed that in the conquest of human addictions, vegetarians have passed the steepest road. The most difficult move is abstinence from meat, after which the replacement of a meatless

diet by raw foodstuffs is only a small step, although it is by this small step that they must reach their final goal. Therefore, it is to be expected that vegetarians of all shades of opinion will accept the principles of raw eating and will collect together under the same banner in order to lay the foundation of that happy life that has always been the dream of mankind.

As an expert in dietetics, great reputation has been won in America by G. Hauser. But even Hauser, progressive as he is in comparison with other dieticians, does not take into consideration the harm done by cooking, and he therefore tries to restore the damage done in the kitchen by means of prescriptions. Let us suppose for a moment that his advice might serve some useful purpose. But where is the worker, the farm laborer, or the ordinary man in the street to find the thousand-dollar fee that he must pay in order to obtain information as to how much black molasses he must take in the morning, how much yeast in the evening, or how many thousand units of a particular vitamin he must swallow every day?

This is not the right approach. It is necessary to acquaint the whole world as thoroughly as possible with the integral raw materials of the human organism, to change radically the present nutritional habits, and to put a stop to the recommendations of specific diets and individual vitamins.

Men of science know that no person feeding exclusively on a diet of bread, polished rice, or meat can hope to live long. But the ordinary man does not know this. In his opinion, those foodstuffs provide excellent nourishment. How can we guarantee that under the



force of circumstances or through the pressure of poverty an individual will not foolishly feed himself and his children on those foodstuffs alone and will not ruin himself in consequence? Even the most eminent scientist, acquainted as he is with the whole subject, is unable to resist the urge of his greed, and he eats so much of those cursed substances that he kills himself slowly but surely and commits suicide all too soon by means of cancer or a heart attack. It is not sufficient, therefore, merely to propagate these ideas in books; it is necessary to mobilize the proper organs of the state in order to introduce basic, planned changes into the nutritional habits of the people. Active measures must be taken to limit gradually the massive waste of nutritional constituents and to encourage the consumption of raw and undefiled foodstuffs. The final objective of every kind of diet is raw eating, when the word "diet" loses its meaning and gives place to the expression NATURAL NUTRITION or THE INTEGRAL RAW MATERIALS FOR THE HUMAN FACTORY.

### **The Use of Artificial Vitamins and Minerals Must Be Stopped**

The relative quantities of the nutritive constituents in natural foodstuffs vary greatly, in the sense that against one milligram of one constituent there may be one thousandth of a milligram of a second constituent and one millionth of a milligram of a third. But the constituent weighing one millionth of a milligram is just as essential for the human factory as that weighing one milligram. Now, during cooking, it is precisely those constituents that exist in small traces only that are destroyed in the first instance.

One may wonder why, with such defective raw materials, the human factory does not stop working at once, as an ordinary factory would do, but continues its operations for quite a long time, thus leading people to the erroneous conclusion that whatever satisfies their appetite is nutriment.

The fact of the matter is that the human body is not an ordinary factory. It is an enormous world with milliards of inhabitants, innumerable factories, various organizations, systems, stores, reserves, and so forth. Even if it does not obtain any nutrition at all, it can still keep itself alive for up to 70 days or even more by calling into use its stored-up reserves.

After entering the organism, the nutrients are distributed throughout the human body by the medium of blood, and each of the cells receives the substances suited to its structure and specialty. But the cells of the glands and the organs take nothing from the few degenerated constituents that are present in cooked food in such small varieties as can be counted on one's fingers. They keep on waiting, in hunger and privation, until their master deigns to extend his fingers to help himself to a piece of onion, green vegetable, or fruit.

Man does not feel the starvation of individual cells, as, notwithstanding the extreme hunger of the glandular and organic cells, his stomach is full, his addiction is satisfied, and he himself is content. But still more content are the worthless, indolent, and inactive cells, which greedily devour the "fully balanced building materials" corresponding to their structures and "strengthen and fortify" the body by increasing its bulk.

This is the reason why, with 50-60 kilograms of superfluous, useless cells, the so-called healthy, stout, and vigorous person does not possess a few hundred grams of active, specialized cells, by which one or other of his glands may function regularly and manufacture faultless products. As long as the glands and organs have not been deprived of the last remnants of active cells, a man is able to drag on his existence somehow; but when they are at last spent, death becomes inevitable. Then the "satiated," "stout," and "vigorous" person dies through having starved his glands and organs. For example, the heart cells lose the necessary power and elasticity for making the normal contractions. The heart then tries to save the situation by increasing the number of its cells, as a result of which it becomes enlarged with cells formed from animal proteins and white bread. But this is of no avail, because these cells lack the capacity of performing any useful work, and it does not take long before the organ stops beating altogether.

We do not know for certain how many different constituents go into the making of a grain of wheat or of any other vegetable body. Let us take a hypothetical, approximate number, say 10,000. By the most elementary laws of nature, we should then have to reason that the raw materials necessary for the human factory are composed of 10,000 different substances, and in supplying those materials, it is important to take particular care that one or the other of the constituents is not absent. This is the most natural system for ensuring the normal operation of the human factory.

Now let us see how topsy-turvy the dietetics of this cooked-eating age are. Humans carry mass destruction

of those essential substances and nourish their bodies with only a few varieties of their constituents.

After years of painstaking research, biologists find that there are only 1015 kinds of substances in cheese, butter, liver, or brains. One would have expected them to confess that as a result of their long labor, they have found that such-and-such foodstuffs consist of only 10-15 kinds of debased, unbalanced, poison-bearing, degenerate, and dead substances, and that of the constituents forming our raw materials, 9990 varieties are absent, and therefore, those foodstuffs are so deficient, harmful, and dangerous that their use as nutrients must not be recommended by anybody. But instead, they specify one by one the names of all the substances that they have managed to find in those foodstuffs, they describe in detail their functions in nutrition, and, after enumerating their properties, they recommend them as "beneficial" nutriment. Not a word do they mention about the absence of the thousands of nutritive constituents, nor do they speak about their role in nutrition or the disastrous results that invariably follow their absence. Yet, these considerations are quite essential aspects of the question.

It must be borne in mind that so manifold are the functions of raw foodstuffs in the organism that even if by some miracle man came to know them all, a whole lifetime would not be sufficient for their mere description. We must regard as one of the elementary laws of nutrition the fact that no nutritive constituent can serve its true purpose if it is taken in isolation, apart from the whole.

When one points out, even to the most famous scientist, that there is no trace of any vitamins in the white bread that he eats, he retorts, without the least hesitation, that he also eats foodstuffs containing vitamins. With equal justification a bricklayer may lay his bricks all day long and raise his wall without any mortar and then argue that there are times when he uses mortar, too. Such is the blindness that is caused by food addiction.

What is white bread if not starch, sugar, fats, proteins, and several kinds of dead salts—in other words, only the lifeless ashes of a few of the 10,000 constituents forming our raw material? What is refined sugar if not one of the above 10,000? What is meat if not poison-containing proteins and traces of a few degenerated constituents? Yet, man fills his stomach to the brink with these few substances and deprives his organs of thousands of really essential nutrients. As to the resulting disorders that come about in his organs, one may form some idea by visiting hospitals or examining the illustrations in medical textbooks. How could such terrible deformations, sores, and ulcers be caused if not through the absence of superior nutrients?

Although scientists have so far discovered only 40-50 kinds of the thousands of nutritive constituents, a large section of medical literature is devoted to the description of the effects of those substances, which also form the basis of a great deal of other medical activities. Besides, a vast net of commercial establishments has spread throughout the length and breadth of the world for the manufacture and distribution of those substances.

We may well picture what the situation will be if, instead of those 40-50 constituents, research scientists succeed one day in finding 400 or 500, not to speak of 4,000 or 5,000 kinds of substances. The man of today seems to have lost sight of the integrity of the real raw materials needed for his body; either they are not immediately at his disposal or he finds it impossible to obtain them. So he has to look into every nook and corner to find them one by one in order to satisfy the needs of his organism. Research scientists regard as scientific only those substances the formulae of which are known to them and are printed in books. As they have no knowledge of the complete formulae of the constituents of a grain of wheat, they do not see anything scientific in it. It is a "common" substance that is easily obtainable, abounds everywhere, and is known to everybody. But it is quite a different matter when they succeed in discovering a new nutritive constituent and finding its formula. It then becomes scientific; its discovery is hailed as a great triumph in the field of medicine, and, what is more, it introduces fresh fervor and enthusiasm into factories, pharmacies, and clinics. And this is all because man does not wish to give up his white bread.

Come what may, people must at last admit that the only way to get rid of disease is first to limit strictly and then to prohibit altogether the mass destruction of our nutritive constituents.

To this end, responsible bodies must carry out intensive publicity and must take active measures to prevent the mass destruction of nutritive constituents. They must obtain new varieties of dishes from mixtures of raw foodstuffs and recommend them to the public,

whose nutritional habits will then undergo gradual changes. As a result, the diseases that now afflict humanity will be progressively eliminated, and an immense economy will be affected in our cost of living.

Before we became raw eaters, our family used to consume a kilogram of bread daily, whereas now a kilogram of wheat lasts us from eight to 10 days. On a diet of white bread I should have been dead long ago, but thanks to the life-giving wheat I am still living, and I feel sure that I shall live for at least another 40-50 years.

**The comparison between the health of raw-eating and cooked-eating children is the best means of confirming the harm incurred by eating cooked food**

The principles must first of all be adopted in day nurseries, children's homes, hospitals, and restaurants, and they should then be popularized by means of publicity among the public at large. With such plain and irrefutable facts as I have presented, it is to be hoped that clear-sighted scientists will set to work at once. But if they wish to have further concrete proof, I propose the following test. Let the infants in one of the children's homes be divided into two equal groups, one of which should be fed by current medical methods, and the other be brought up by the principles of raw eating. Then let the health of the two groups be compared with each other. I have no doubt whatsoever that right from the beginning it will be clear to the whole world which of the two systems of nutrition is truly scientific and

humanitarian. The same results may be obtained by adapting the method for the cure of hospital patients.

Many simpleminded people may object to the test on the ground that it is sinful or injurious to carry out such "experiments" on children. However, if such people think a little deeper, they will see that it is not an experiment to safeguard the life and health of a child by feeding him with the complete collection of the pure nutritive constituents intended by nature for the human organism. The real experiments are those inhuman tests that are conducted under the guise of science with a few varieties of synthetic substances barely recognized in the laboratory as yet, as a result of which millions of children depart from life in their infancy, leaving their parents in bitter grief. Experiments are those operations that play with the health of the people by 1,001 degenerated foodstuffs and poisons and create new diseases. These diseases are ludicrously named the diseases of civilization, without the least feeling of shame at such a "civilization" and without reflecting that the conditions that gave birth to such diseases may be named ignorance, savagery, or barbarism, but never civilization.

### **Scientific Institutions and Responsible State Bodies Must Examine the Problem of Raw Eating Without Further Delay**

I have proposed a radical and, at the same time, a very simple and natural method by which mankind will be freed from every illness on earth. This is a very important matter to which all scientists, doctors, intellectuals, and responsible state bodies must give immediate attention. They must either prove publicly



that I am wrong in my views and refute them by basic experiments, or they must confirm their truth and take the necessary steps to put them into practice. In particular, should any indifference or silence be exhibited by doctors, it may be construed by the general public as a clear case of unwillingness on their part to ward off diseases, in order that their field of operation may not be reduced. Personally, I do not believe that this is generally true, because few human beings could be so ruthless; but doctors must give positive proof that they have a higher and nobler aim than the making of money and that their object is, in fact, service to science and service to humanity.

Noble, public-spirited, and altruistic doctors reach their aspired objective by the acceptance of raw eating, whereas inhuman, selfish, raw-eating, and covetous doctors see in it their personal loss. The alleged difficulty of changing deep-rooted customs can only serve as a flimsy excuse to veil the niggardly self-interests of wicked people. The discovery of raw eating is the best opportunity to distinguish the noble from the ignoble, the good from the evil, and the wise from the unwise.

There is no activity of greater humanitarian value than the propagation of raw eating. It is necessary to arouse all mankind from its centuries-old slumber, to open its eyes, to shake it out of its lethargy, and to free it from its present nightmare. The rich must donate their money to this cause; the intellectuals, their brains. It is essential to form societies, establish clubs, publish newspapers and print books. Furthermore, it is requisite to construct spacious sanatoria with all the amenities for rest, amusements and sports, and by

means of a few months' "imprisonment" to heal, to rejuvenate, to free from destructive prejudices, and to help and enlighten those people who lack the necessary information and willpower. It is much more useful and desirable to devote money and energy to this purpose than constructing useless buildings that we don't need such as churches or schools and hospitals. Raw-eating is a touchstone by which we may verify which intellectual is really in possession of free and unfettered judgment, or which person is indeed interested in the health and well-being of the public. It is in letters of gold that history will record the names of such people.

### **It Is No Sin to Speak the Truth**

Some people accuse me of having a sharp tongue. When I call cooked-eaters murderers, filicides and criminals, I am not making an accusation; I am merely telling the truth, bitter as that truth may be. When a mother fills the mouth of her beloved child with hot food by her own careful hands, she impairs the organs of her baby and leads him to illness and to death. When a doctor prepares a diet of "nutritious" and "easily digestible" meals for little children and prescribes pills of artificial vitamins at the expense of vegetables and fruit, he commits an even greater offence.

Every day I observe how, by a strange irony of fate, the weak and the diseased regard as curative those very substances that have been the cause of their illnesses, and devour them greedily, while, on the contrary, they shun with fright the only substances (raw vegetables and fruits) that can restore them to health, just because they regard them as the cause of their afflictions. Millions of lives are sacrificed solely because of this

fatal misconception. The person who penetrates the full depth of the tragedy can never remain cool and indifferent.

### **No Legal Barrier Exists Against the Destruction of the Raw Materials Intended for the Human Factory**

When a slight defect comes to light in the proper balance of the raw materials supplied to the industry of a county, the persons responsible are accused of negligence and brought to book, whereas those who commit the most hideous adulteration in the raw materials necessary for the proper working of the human factory often go scot-free. In the present century of scientific advance, the most ignorant and stupid person has an absolute right to look for new methods of degenerating natural foodstuffs, and to concoct and offer for sale the most ridiculous eatables. But what is particularly strange is the fact that the great scientist, the great cytologist, who has devoted his life to the study of the biological functions of the living cells, or the dietician, whose chief aim in his life is the working out of the ideal diet for man, buys a heap of such degenerated substances and offers them to his cells, with the utmost indifference and carelessness, guided by the dictates of his palate alone.

At first sight it seems unbelievable that we could free ourselves of all illnesses by means of raw-eating. But the greatness of the proposition lies in the very fact that the "unbelievable" easily becomes an accomplished reality. The difficulty of relinquishing food-addiction must not be regarded as an obstacle to the realization of the ideal of raw-eating; on the contrary, it must serve

as a measure to gauge the strength of the enemy to the human race and must spur us to make every effort to prevent the entry of such a dreadful monster into the organism of the new-born child. Even those people who find it difficult to abandon cooked meals themselves, and still persist in their harmful habits, must affirm the truth, and for the sake of the rising generation and the future of mankind they must fight for the victory of that truth by preaching and expounding the principles of raw-eating and by all other available means.

Of course, for those narrow-minded and backward-looking people who are irrevocably biased in favor of cooked foods and drugs the principles of raw-eating are far too advanced, but today we live in the Cosmic Age, and not in the Middle Ages, when every progressive idea or great invention was for years persecuted by the ignorant rabble. Today, it is the question of the survival or the annihilation of the human race that is placed before us. Hesitation is inhuman.

### **Raw-Eating Ensures Immense Benefits in Public Economy and Raises the Standard of Living Several Times**

An unbelievable quantity of nutrients is destroyed on the fire and by the numerous forms of peeling, refining and processing. As an example it may be said that 100 grams of sprouted wheat has a greater nutritive value than the white bread obtained from a kilogram of wheat. The same is true of all other varieties of corn, pulses, vegetables and fruits. If we dispense with all animal foodstuffs today, the vegetables produced in the world will be able to feed by themselves several times the present population of the world, provided that they

are eaten in the raw state. The real meaning of raw-eating will become all the more understandable, when we think of the labor, the time and the money that people waste in destroying those nutrients, and then consider all the medical expenses incurred both by the various ministries of health and by the general public in the hope of eliminating the ravages brought about in our organs by the destruction of those selfsame nutrients. I am ready to demonstrate the truth of my statements by concrete proofs to anyone who may wish to have further particulars on the subject. History will never pardon those responsible people in authority who show indifference in this matter and shut their ears to these crying truths in order to justify their personal addictions.

There can be only two reasons for their refusal to accept the principles of raw-eating. Either they must declare that they prefer to tolerate the existence of diseases rather than to "deprive" mankind of the "pleasures" of cooked meals and to give up the possibility of putting into practice a whole series of "scientific achievements" attained as a result of much hard work or, by the performance of the basic tests proposed by me, they must prove that, far from freeing people from diseases, raw-eating actually harms them all the more. This they will find quite impossible to do. It follows that they have no alternative but to rely on their first reasoning, the extreme inhumanity of which is evident to all.

Therefore, on behalf of all innocent children, I demand that the opponents of raw-eating should submit their objections to the press, so that they may obtain their proper reply and public opinion may have the

opportunity to draw the necessary conclusions and to pronounce its final and just verdict.

## **Everyone Must Recognize the Real and Integral Raw Materials of His Body**

Every individual is the proud possessor of one of the complicated factories in the world and it is he alone who is responsible for the smooth operation of the given factory. It is necessary, therefore, that he should be thoroughly acquainted with the real, faultless and integral raw material of that wonderful factory.

The integrity of those raw materials is not determined by the quantities of proteins, fats, carbohydrates, vitamins, minerals and calories that are specified by the present day biologists in their textbooks on nutrition. Nor is it possible to determine it by putting side by side long lists of recipes for cooked foods.

Through millions and millions of years and by the most precise calculations our wonderful nature has brought together the integral raw materials necessary for the human organism, has combined them in perfect harmony and in the requisite quantities, has given them life and has concentrated them in vegetable bodies in the form of living cells. The whole secret of nutrition lies in those cells being dead or alive. Under no circumstances can substances consisting of dead cells serve as raw materials for the human factory.

Man should not lose his sense of proportion and gloat over his inventions beyond the bounds of reason. It is true that in the study of individual nutritional constituents biologists have taken an immense amount

of trouble and have made a great many important discoveries, which fully deserve our appreciation. All those achievements, however, may be regarded great only in relation to the present technical and mental development of man. Against the supreme wisdom of nature even the most eminent scientists, with all their learning and their countless discoveries, have no greater insight than a child of five. They have no right, therefore, to upset the harmony and integrity of the raw materials constructed by nature and to impose upon the public their childish smattering of knowledge as perfect science.

Undoubtedly, in trying to penetrate into the secrets of foodstuffs the ultimate aim of scientists is to recognize all those nutritional constituents that are essential to the human organism, to determine their relative quantities and to integrate them together. In other words, they wish to prepare artificially a grain of wheat or lentil and to give life to it. But what man has been unable to obtain after thousands of years of incessant labor, nature presents to us gratuitously today. What more do we want? Do we entertain any doubts concerning the wisdom of the universe or does addiction to meat incite man to commit the most unbelievable follies?

It is most senseless and dangerous to suppose that we need more proteins or other nutritional constituents than there are in vegetable bodies. If the latter contain only small quantities of proteins, it follows that our bodies do not need more, for it is precisely with those quantities that our organism has been constructed and developed over a period of millions of centuries.

Some people are very fond of talking continually about body-building materials. If the "fully- balanced" animal proteins and "nutritious meals" could increase the height of every generation by as little as one millimeter, today the height of man would have increased by several meters already.

Mass-produced artificial vitamins can never serve as nutritional constituents for the very obvious reason that quite often within five minutes after their entry into the human body they stop the functions of our organism altogether; in other words, they drive us to death.

It is deplorable short-sightedness to regard any particular foodstuff as a source of a specific vitamin or of any other nutritional constituent. All organic compounds are formed of almost the same constituents, but they differ in their physical and chemical properties because of differences in their composition and molecular structure. Thus, everybody knows that alcohols and sugars are composed of the same chemical elements (carbon, hydrogen and oxygen), but they differ greatly in color, taste and appearance. Birds are kept in cages with one kind of seed or grain and domestic animals are often fed on one kind of grass only. Yet, these creatures obtain their full supply of proteins, fats, vitamins and minerals from the one kind of foodstuff given to them.

The treatment of diseases by means of false vitamins, destructive antibiotics and various poisons are hopeless experiments that are based not on aetiological and basic reasoning, but on symptomatic, apparent and contradictory data.



No artificial vitamin can restore the wonderful balance of the natural vitamins burned on the fire; no poison can regulate the normal biological functions of degenerated organs and glands; no antibiotic can replace the natural antibiotics destroyed in the kitchen.

Animals heal their sores by licking them. Their secretions and saliva are endowed with bactericidal properties. The secretions of a cooked-eating man, however, are devoid of such properties. The raw-eater wards off the danger of a serious cold through the agency of secretions released by the tissues of the respiratory tract, whereas a cooked-eater produces streams of sputum and saliva, but is still not able to resist that very same danger.

### **The Age of Cooked-Eating Is the Age When Addictions, Superstitions and Microbes Reign Supreme**

Modern medicine is surrounded by a tangled net of vain superstitions. The whole medical activity is based on symptomatic, apparent, deceptive and contradictory data, while the most essential and fundamental principle has been buried in oblivion. This is the fact that THE EFFICIENT OPERATION OF EVERY FACTORY IS SUBJECT TO THE UNIFORM SUPPLY OF THE INTEGRAL RAW MATERIALS SPECIFIED BY THE ENGINEER. In this case, THE INTEGRAL RAW MATERIALS OF THE HUMAN FACTORY ARE THE LIVING VEGETABLE CELLS AND NOTHING ELSE.

Intoxicated by a few technical successes, the man of today imagines himself at the zenith of civilization, while in reality he drags on a most primitive, unnatural

and gruesome life of nightmare. Generally speaking, in the fields of politics, economics, morality and health the mind and feelings of man are ruled and his actions are directed by loathsome addictions and vain superstitions. Forgetting the most essential and basic problems of life, humans exaggerate quite trivial matters of secondary importance and turn them into vital questions, and then they waste an immense amount of time and resources, create enmities, shed oceans of blood and spread universal ruin and destruction.

Historians of the past have painted in the most abhorrent colors the imposts and tributes levied by foreign conquerors. Whereas today, the moment they take the helm of the state, humans who are regarded as civilized and enlightened use various legalized pretexts to confiscate more than 90 percent of the total earnings of their own people in order to satisfy their personal addictions and ambitions. They encourage the production of tobacco, alcoholic and non-alcoholic beverages, tea, cocoa and coffee, all of which undermine the health of the people, and then pride themselves on the increase in government income obtained from those sources. As well might the foolish father of a family gloat over his paltry penny gained at the expense of a pound squandered by his children and, what is worse still, at the heavy price of undermining their health.

That current suggestions and recommendations of individual vitamins and minerals do not achieve any useful results whatever is apparent from the fact that, spurred on by the urge of the all-powerful addiction, the nutritional habits of mankind gradually develop on a frightful pattern that encourages the production of

dangerous foodstuffs lacking in vitamins and minerals. Without the least rest or respite, there arise continually factories for the production of tobacco, alcoholic and non-alcoholic drinks, biscuits, sweets, ice cream, sausages, canned food, white bread, margarine and various other dangerous substances.

All these come to prove that in the conduct of their daily life people are guided not by common sense, but by the destructive addictions and vain superstitions particular to cooked-eating mankind. There exist in this world numerous groupings that concern themselves with trivial and secondary questions of strictly limited interest. Henceforth, the primary duty of civilized man should be to wage an urgent and decisive campaign against addictions and superstitions of every description. This is the only basic means by which man will succeed in attaining that plenteous, peaceful, comfortable, healthy, long and happy life which he has always aspired.

The concrete proof is before my eyes. By means of raw-eating not only have I saved my life, but I have also freed myself from all those illnesses that used to torment me continually and I have completely driven away from me that haunting specter of early death. At the age of 61, when cooked-eaters stop working and go into retirement, I have regained the health, strength, vigor and energy of a young man of 25. For months on end, I work 16 hours a day, without experiencing the least feeling of weariness. I am quite confident that I shall live again the full span of a cooked-eater's life.

It has often been said that man should eat to live and not live to eat. Now the time has come to prove who are

those that regard eating as a means to an end and not an end in itself. Let such people follow my example, step into the arena, join hands in a common cause, fight against every human addiction and open up the road to a new and happy life for all mankind.

The subjects discussed in this book are not specialized questions that ought to be discussed behind closed doors. They are matters that concern humanity as a whole and must be considered publicly so that everybody may be able to recognize the real raw material of his body.

It is the duty of all those people who are interested in the health of themselves and their children to raise their voice and demand that those who oppose the principles of raw-eating should submit their criticisms to the press, in order that I may have the opportunity to give them appropriate replies and thus to dispel the skepticism of the general public towards the doctrine of raw-eating.

## **Appendix**

Readers of my books on raw-eating often apply to me both in person and in writing and ask for the details of a special raw-eating diet. Now, the raw-eater has no particular programme for morning, midday or evening meals. He eats whenever he wishes, whatever he fancies and as much as his appetite demands. But because cooked-eaters, being accustomed to special hours and laws of feeding, wish to see the system of raw-eating, too, regulated under certain rules, let it be so. There is no particular harm in it.

It is, of course, beyond the ability of a single person to work out detailed recipes and to plan various menus to include a large number of new dishes. The innumerable variety of cooked dishes and degenerated foodstuffs that we see today have been developed gradually, in the course of thousands of years and by the efforts of thousands of people. When people are at last convinced that the most sensible mode of feeding is raw-eating, many kinds of savory dishes will make their appearance, as it were, overnight.

Provided that she devotes a few weeks of the time that she usually spends in cooking, every housewife will be able to work out, according to her own taste, a great variety of wonderful new dishes by mixtures of the numerous raw foodstuffs available to us; and in doing so, she will enrich the general menu at the same time. Let us take our own family as an example.

After a number of trials I came to the conclusion that foods such as grains, pulses, potatoes, aubergines and marrows, the raw consumption of which is considered impossible by food addicts, may be mixed in various quantities to form such savory salads as will please even the most convinced meat addict.

We soak wheat, lentils, chickpeas, beans, etc. in plenty of water. When they begin to sprout in a day or two, we rinse them with fresh water. Then we drain this water off, cover the pot with a lid and put it in a cool place. In this condition they may be eaten for three or four days. They may also be taken with raisins, walnuts, dates and a great many other eatables or they may be mixed with various salads.

When we want to prepare salad, we pass wheat, lentils, etc. through a mincing-machine, and grate potatoes and carrots on a fine grater; then we cut cucumbers, tomatoes and onions into thin slices with a knife, and shred green pepper and several kinds of green vegetables.

We now mix them all together and add raw olive oil, fresh lemon juice and a little fresh spring water. One may also add walnuts, raisins, dates, and so on. The relative quantities of the ingredients depend on individual taste. In summer it is pleasant to eat such salads iced.

Taking the method of preparing this salad as a basis, it is possible to prepare a large variety of salads in different flavors and appearances by using all kinds of greens and various other vegetables, such as spinach, lettuce, aubergine, beetroot and, in general, whatever our vegetable gardens provide, but the essential components of the salad are grains, pulses and potatoes.

This salad must become the basic food of all mankind. This nutriment, which is the most complete nourishment for both the rich and the poor, has the advantages of being health-giving, strengthening, satisfying, nutritious and cheap. It is a dish that contains all the essential factors for a long and healthy life. It is a prescription against all illnesses. A plateful of this meal, together with a little additional fruit, is quite sufficient to meet the daily requirements of a man and at the same time to afford him the best protection against every kind of disease.

Taking into consideration the relative dearness of certain varieties of fruits that are scarce in winter, some people think that raw-eating will prove rather expensive then. They imagine that the raw-eater must feed on nothing but fresh fruit all the years round. This, of course, is not true. There are people who finish off a huge meal with a generous quantity of fruit. If such people eat that fruit with only a portion of the bread which they usually consume (but in the raw form of wheat, of course), they will find themselves fully satisfied. In this way, they will be saved both the expense and the trouble of preparing cooked meals, tea, pastries and all kinds of other degenerated eatables.

There are certain foodstuffs, such as wheat, walnuts, root vegetables, that are found in all the seasons of the year with only slight fluctuations in their prices. Moreover, advantage may be taken of fresh fruits when they are in season; thus, when mulberries are plentiful we may feed ourselves mostly on mulberries, and so with grapes and other fruits.

During the winter many kinds of naturally-dried fruits may be soaked in cold water, turned into raw compote and enjoyed with great pleasure. To this compote we may add some nuts, pistachios, sprouted wheat, cardamom or vanilla powder, etc. Raw compote is the most economical and at the same time the most pleasant food in winter.

Besides eating walnuts, almonds, pistachios and hazel nuts in their natural state, mixed with other dried fruits, we may also grind them and use them in various other forms, or we may mix them with raw vegetable hotchpotch or various compotes. The most delightful

confection of a raw-eater is the "Halva" or sweetmeat of walnuts, almonds or pistachios. These are crushed, spiced to taste with cardamom, vanilla or saffron and cut into small squares. This Halva is eaten with the greatest relish with various green vegetables. It may be put in a lettuce leaf and eaten as a sort of sandwich. Water mixed with fresh lemon juice is the best beverage that may be given to children.

In conclusion, it is again necessary to remind the reader of a very important circumstance that must always be borne in mind. In the initial period of raw-eating food addicts may experience various forms of discomforts, which may leave the impression that raw foodstuffs are harmful to them and that they weaken them or make them ill. It must be remembered that all the existing erroneous and disastrous conceptions in dietetics have their origin in such apparent and contradictory impressions. Outward symptoms, therefore, must never serve as an excuse for leaving the work half done. It is necessary to wait for the final results, which may take a few weeks or months to come. But if cooked foods are sometimes mixed with raw nutriments, those results may be very much delayed and not effective or not appear at all.

Their discomforts are nothing but curative reactions, and by the resistance shown to them they will be able to free themselves from all known and unknown diseases.

The most lasting of those discomforts is, of course, the craving for cooked food. It must always be borne in mind, however, that the impulses of the "hunger" felt under such circumstances are stimulated not by the normal or healthy cells, but by the degenerate, useless



and inactive cells and by the poisons accumulated in the body; in other words, by the very disease that waste the organism. Therefore, it is precisely by enduring and resisting that feeling of "hunger" that we shall be able to eliminate those poisons, get rid of the presence of worthless cells, build up the necessary complement of active cells and secure once for all the blessings of good health. Every hour's endurance of that "hunger" is a victory in our fight against disease.

*Tehran, 1963*

## **PART TWO**

### **The Construction of the Human Organism**

The subjects that I discuss in this book are not specialized problems. They are questions which touch humanity as a whole. They affect all those who have bodies and live; they concern all those who have mouths and eat. That is why I always try my best to write in as simple a language as possible, basing my conclusions upon general data and arguments, without clogging my writing with such scientific details and indigestible terminology as are beyond the comprehension of the majority of my readers. In my -arguments, I do not rely upon a multitude of apparent and contradictory data obtained in the laboratory by imperfect means or, worse still, upon any erroneous assumptions based on such data. The proofs that I present are the irrefutable laws of nature and such general conclusions as are obtained by basic experience, and which every individual in every corner of the world can readily test and verify for himself.

In reality, the conception of raw-eating is so simple that it can be summed up in two plain sentences: the creator of man's body has also created its corresponding raw materials; provided that we deliver those raw materials to the body in their entirety, without tampering with them, the human organism will complete its full span of life without succumbing to any illnesses.

Any person who is clear-sighted enough to understand the true meaning of those two sentences and to give it the necessary thought and reflection can easily discern in what deplorable state is the nutritional system of the man of today. He can also see with equal ease that in the field of combating human diseases for centuries past, humans have had recourse to such means as are both mistaken and dangerous and, moreover, all those means have very little connection indeed with the fundamental causes of diseases.

After years of careful study and basic personal experience, today I have no doubt whatever that the natural system of nutrition not only frees mankind from all kinds of diseases, but it also provides for every human being a wonderfully long life filled with peace, happiness and comfort.

The life of the man of today is a terrible nightmare, haunted by countless sins, addictions and vices. Indeed, it would be necessary to fill thousands of volumes in order to describe fully all the vices of the human being, to enumerate in detail his erroneous habits of feeding, to point out minutely the vicious corruption of his manners and finally to indicate one by one the various mistaken means of combating those evils. But the

foremost problem before us is for every man to know clearly how diseases are born and what is the radical method of eradicating those diseases once for all.

In the first place, it is necessary to know how our organism is constructed and what nutrition is.

As we know, life on our planet made its first appearance in the form of single-celled organisms. Later on, those individual unicellular bodies cooperated together to form various groupings and to bring into being multi-cellular organisms. The initial cooperation of a few cells in course of time develops to such an extent as to give birth to a living being of many milliards of cells.

Every individual cell is a complex organism in itself, but such organisms have their different stages of development. The most primitive unicellular organisms were amoebae of the most elementary structure, which moved about in water for no apparent purpose whatever. Their only functions were to look for food, to eat, to digest and to multiply by the simple process of dividing themselves into two. They had their rudimentary digestive organs, which developed gradually as time went on. At a later stage of development, those cells grouped themselves together to form multi-cellular organisms. In other words, abandoning their aimless life of detached individualism, they pass on to a life of cooperation, where each cell has a particular function to perform in the aggregate pattern of collective activities.

Compare the individualistic life of the primordial man, before he could even talk properly, with the co-op

life of today great nations, where separate groups of people work together. But even in our advanced society of today one may find useless, stupid, parasitic and criminal characters reminiscent of our slothful ancestors of primeval days. Yet, such creatures live side by side with people of extraordinary talent and genius.

The same is true of the human body, where useless, parasitic cells carry on their sluggish existence alongside extremely useful cells in a most advanced stage of development. The human body has its various organizations and establishments, which are named glands, organs, systems, and so forth. Those organs and systems carry out their functions by the simultaneous efforts of particular groups of specialized cells. It is interesting to note that these specialized cells do not perform their specific functions by the help of special instruments and equipment constructed outside; rather each of them is itself converted, through its entire structure, into a highly complex factory.

Thus, the cells that form the kidneys are endowed with special draining and filtering equipment by means of which they separate from the blood and expel with the urine the impurities and poisons harmful to the organism; the cells of the glands take the necessary raw materials from the intercellular fluid (of which raw material there is not a trace in cooked food) and, converting them into hormones, deliver them to the body; the cells of the muscles possess special contractile power that enables them to make bodily movements and perform heavy mechanical work; finally, the nerve cells are powered with yards of fibers by means of which the commands of the brain are transmitted to the whole body. So each of the cells that

form the human body is a complicated factory of a particular structure differing in its functions from those of its neighbors, starting from the cells of the nails, hair, bones, muscles and glands to the cells of the brain.

Undoubtedly, it would have been very interesting to have complete knowledge of the structure of the cells and the nature of all the activities and processes that take place in them. But even if by some miracle man could penetrate into all the hidden secrets of the cells and their multifarious functions, it would be necessary to fill not merely thousands, but millions of volumes to describe them, while each of us would need a dozen lives to obtain just a cursory view of all that was written.

Contrary to the pretentious claims of some boastful braggarts, man has very little information indeed about all these matters. With every advance in his studies he should have been more and more convinced that the knowledge which he had been able to acquire was an infinitesimal part of what still lay hidden from him. Yet, intoxicated by a few technical successes, the man of today imagines himself at the zenith of scientific perfection and without any let or hindrance he tampers at will with that miracle of miracles, the human organism. In fact, he is so naively presumptuous that by means of the most terrible contrivances and by even more terrible poisons he undertakes desperately insane EXPERIMENTS in order to remedy the disorders which have made their appearance in that organism. For indeed, nothing has been done so far by EXPERIMENTS, EXPERIMENTS AND STILL MORE EXPERIMENTS. Moreover, he makes those experiments not only on poor defenseless animals, but also on his

own body, on his beloved children, on all mankind. HE DOES NOT SEE ANY OTHER MEANS OF ATTAINING HIS GOAL.

But we must always keep in view an irrefutable fact: a man who has no proper knowledge of the workings of an ordinary watch should never undertake to repair it, for fear of throwing the whole mechanism into disorder by a simple wrong movement of the hand. The experiments made on the human organism by the scientists of today may be compared to the senseless action of the workman who, having worked in a factory for a few days, attempts to dismantle its machinery and assemble it again.

In the case of an acute illness the healer is always nature, but the cure is ascribed to the efficacy of drugs, while in the numerous instances when the illness takes a fatal course as a direct result of the administration of drugs, death is always attributed to the natural course of the illness. It must be emphasized that in chronic diseases, drugs, as a rule, aggravate the condition and impair the organism.

Then, what must a man do when his organs begin to work irregularly? Is there anybody in the world who is acquainted with all the details of man's organism in the same way as an engineer is acquainted with the details of all the different components of his factory, to the last screw? Ofcourse not. As I said above, the repair of any mechanism may be entrusted only to that specialist who has the skill and ability to separate all the parts of the given machine and put them back together. But how far removed man is from achieving this aim in the case of his own body!

What then must man do in the circumstances? Must he fold his arms and resign himself to the fickle caprices of his fate, or must he bring calamity to a head by the continuous invention of new poisons and by the insane experiments performed with them? Neither one nor the other. There is, fortunately, an immediate and super easy method by which man can free himself from all diseases.

When an engineer constructs a factory, by means of mathematical calculations he determines the quality and quantity of all the raw materials necessary for that factory, as well as the care that must be taken for the operation and maintenance of its machinery. He then guarantees the operational life of the given factory, provided that his instructions are carried out with care.

### **What is Nutrition?**

Just as every engineer makes detailed calculations to specify the raw materials essential for the factory that he has designed, so by means of the most accurate computations the wonderful Nature has developed the necessary raw materials for all animals including Humans.

When we wish to construct an ordinary factory, first of all we erect a suitable building, then we place in it all the necessary machinery and the dynamo, and finally, in order that the factory may begin production, we provide it with the requisite fuel and raw materials. Now because the human organism has an extremely intricate construction, its raw materials are of a correspondingly complex nature, consisting of numerous substances.

Nature has carried out a stupendous amount of work in that direction. In the first place, for the simple structure of the cells it has prepared simple building materials, which vary according to the type of the cells. Thus, the cells of the hair demand a particular kind of building materials, those of the nails another kind. The same is true of the cells of the muscles, glands, nerves, and so on. But cells of such simple structure are of no use as yet; each of them must now be provided with the proper equipment corresponding to its particular function, for which still further building materials are needed. Finally, it is necessary to supply those cells with energy and provide the necessary raw materials for the productive operations of the glands.

By its unfailing providence, Nature has collected together all those materials, the number of which reaches tens of thousands. Each of those materials has its precise quantity. Thus, of one kind of substance we may need a thousand grams, of another kind only one gram, of a third as little as one thousandth of a gram. This is the operative rule in all factories. It is essential that those materials should always be at the disposal of the cells in the predetermined quantities. In particular, special care must be taken to make sure that none of them is absent from the aggregate collection.

Every person, learned and simple, rich and poor alike, is the sole possessor of his own body and the only director responsible for that miraculous world of inner galaxies.

It is interesting to note that all the living beings on this Earth, from an Ant or a Sparrow to the Elephant,



recognize that aggregate collection and make full use of it for their nutritional needs.

Paradoxically enough, ever since the dawn of civilization man alone, as a solitary exception in the whole wide world, has taken leave of his senses and has completely lost sight of the integrity of the very materials that are indispensable for his own well-being. That is why he labors day and night in his laboratories and research workshops, carries out all kinds of tests and experiments, discovers similar materials one by one, manufactures them speedily in his factories, concocts strange names for them, fills them into boxes and bottles, and disperses them all over the world, so that people may swallow them and not stay hungry. And all this they call science.

Without realizing what they are doing, scientists have stepped into the arena in defiance of nature. Blinded by addictions, those people are unable to see that through millions and millions of years and by the most accurate calculations our mother Earth, in her Providence, has brought together, has concentrated into plants and has filled the whole world with those very nutritive constituents that they have only just started to recognize, one by one.

All the living organisms in the world have descended from the same ancestors, but in course of time they have taken different evolutionary directions. The anatomical and physiological difference between human and other animals are fundamentally very small.

Just like man, those animals too have heart, lungs, liver, kidneys, blood, bones, brain, and so on. Their

organs demand exactly the same nutritive constituents as the organs of man do. The greatest mistake made by the research biologist has been to waste too much time and effort on the investigation of entirely secondary, trifling and contradictory problems, with which he has clogged his brain and muddled his mind, instead of relying on such general facts and data as are at his disposal and basing his knowledge on the results obtained by essentially fundamental experiments.

We should take note of the fact that when an animal plucks a "paltry" leaf from a tree in the forest, it satisfies all the needs of its organism by the consumption of that "simple" leaf. In that single leaf, nature has concentrated all those substances which are necessary to construct new cells in the body of that animal; to differentiate those cells, to nourish them and give them energy, and finally to provide the essential raw materials for the glands.

In short, that leaf comprises the fully-balanced raw materials for the animal organism; That leaf is the proper NUTRIMENT for an animal.

### **All Varieties of Raw Vegetables Consist Essentially of the Same Constituents**

Should the above animal, unable to find anything to eat besides that leaf, be obliged to subsist on that one kind of food for months or years on end, its organism will not feel any deficiency of vitamins or other nutritive constituents for that matter. It makes no difference if instead of the leaf of a tree, it has at its disposal some other plants. What is important is the fact that the food which it consumes is NATURAL AND INTACT.

When they put a measure of fodder before a horse or a donkey, they never worry themselves over the thought that the quantity of proteins or vitamins may be insufficient for the animal, although we know it full well that animals too, like human, they need every kind of vitamins, minerals and other nutritive constituents.

Everybody can clearly see that the choice of foodstuffs at the disposal of the thousands of different kinds of animals is so limited that they never have the opportunity to pick and choose what they would rather eat. They are obliged to live on the few varieties of common foodstuffs which are available in their immediate neighborhood. Nevertheless, we are not able to find a single case of avitaminosis or any other nutritional deficiency among them.

If you take the foodstuffs consumed by those animals into the laboratories of biologists, in each of them they will find several substances of varying qualities and quantities. They will then tell you that in a particular plant there is so much protein, so much fat and so much of one vitamin or other. Thus in each plant they will enumerate some 10-15 constituents that they have managed to find and will carefully determine their quantities one by one. Even in the richest fruits the number of constituents that they have succeeded in discovering has been strictly limited. In reality, this does not prove that each of those foodstuffs consists of only the dozen or so constituents found by them; rather, it is an indication that their technical skill and resources are quite inadequate to analyze fully and to determine qualitatively and quantitatively all those constituents that have come together in nature's laboratory to give birth to the given vegetable body. It means that in the

particular foodstuff they have been able to discover only those few kinds of constituent; the rest have remained hidden from them.

The main reason for this is the fact that the substances discovered by biologists are not the primary constituents of those vegetables, but they are compounds that appear in different forms in different vegetables. On entering the animal body, those compounds are broken down and synthesized again, during which process new compounds are formed corresponding to the needs of the organism.

### **ALL FRUITS & VEGETABLES ARE EQUAL**

Fundamentally, all vegetables consist of three main classes of substances. One of them is water, which is familiar to us all. We know that we cannot live without water, and we may well remember that the purest and safest source of water known to us is that found in fruits and veggies. Next, comes the roughage. This is the substance that constitutes the framework of vegetable bodies, giving them form and firmness. Roughage is not broken up and assimilated in the animal organs; it is expelled from the body in the form of faeces. It is, however, an essential constituent of animal diet. If there was no roughage and the food consumed by the animal was completely broken up and assimilated, the intestines would have nothing to expel, and in course of time they would shrivel and dry up. Yet, strange to say, many people are so short-sighted that, regarding roughage as "indigestible", they deliberately remove it from their foodstuffs, as a result of which nearly all mankind suffer from constipation. In other words, the chief cause of constipation is the absence of roughage

in the diet. But to return to the subject under discussion, the last of the three classes of substances in fruits and vegetables is the nutriment itself, which is fully digested and assimilated by the organism.

The essential differences between diverse vegetables arise from variations in the relative quantities of those three classes of substances. Thus, the main difference between the common grass and fruit is that in the former roughage predominates, whereas fruit consists of only a moderate amount of roughage, with plenty of concentrated nutriments and an adequate quantity of water. Because of the special structure of their digestive organs and their faculty of rumination, quadrupeds are able to crush and grind the grass, to extract the nutriments sparsely dispersed in it and to expel the rest from their bodies. This is how certain animals manage to obtain nourishment from dry hay or straw; the camel is able to sustain life on deserts thistles and the donkey on the roughest of grasses.

From this, we can draw the important conclusion that all vegetables contain the necessary nutrients for sustaining animal organisms, only in some vegetables they appear in a scattered form, in others they are highly concentrated. Among natural foodstuffs the most nutritious are walnuts, almonds, grains, pulses, potatoes, carrots, bananas, grapes and all the other fruits, after which come the other roots, herbs and greens; in other words, the very foodstuffs which man has snatched away from the mouth of other animals and has appropriated to himself. Yet, whenever the question of raw-eating comes up for discussion, that same man shamelessly retorts: "How can I nourish myself without cooked food?" A more disgraceful utterance one cannot

find in the world, but unfortunately corpse-eating addiction has so blinded mankind that it is, in fact, the usual response of the majority of people. Those who lack the necessary experience are in no position to realize how rich and nutritious those substances are and how little is the quantity required to satisfy our daily needs. In my own case, it took me years to arrive at the truth. But I shall speak more about this later.

Those nutritive constituents that are found in a concentrated state in the fruit of a tree are also found dispersed sparsely in its leaves, bark and branches. A giant animal like the giraffe nourishes itself by feeding on tree-leaves. When a small bud of a tree is grafted upon another tree, it shoots forth branches and eventually gives the corresponding fruit. This is a clear indication that the bud contains all the elementary constituents that are essential for the formation of a given fruit.

Now, what are those elementary constituents? They are the atoms, which may be regarded as the smallest chemically indivisible particle of an element that can take part in a chemical change, and the molecules, which are the smallest particles of an elements or compound that can normally lead a separate existence. All edible plants consist of almost the same elements, by the different proportions and arrangements of which various compounds are formed, differing from one another in form, color and taste. Furthermore, the clove and the sheep are exactly the same. On being introduced into the stomach of the sheep, the clove changes its molecular structure and becomes a sheep. There is a similar correspondence between the fruit and human.

All vegetable and animal life is nothing but an eternal interchange and circulation of atoms. It is here that the great wonder and nature asserts itself. We throw into the ground a minute grain no bigger than the head of a pin. After a few it slowly sprouts, then it shoots forth branches and leaves, and in due course it gives fruit. Later it is changed into a cow, a horse or a human that roves about this world for a while and then returns its atoms to the Earth. There, under the vivifying influence of sunlight, those very atoms are revived afresh, new life is breathed into them and they are turned once more into the same plants and animals, to continue infinitive cycles of creation over and over again.

But in order that it may give birth to a living organism, the vegetable body must be complete and LIVING. Moreover, it is by no means sufficient for the foodstuff to be merely living; the perfect vegetable nourishment must be ACTIVE and NOT DORMANT.

Long experience has shown us that cage birds are not satisfied with dry seeds alone. With their dry seeds they demand some fresh food as well. The particular variety of those seeds or the fresh food is not very important. Perfect nourishment can be obtained by choosing a certain variety of seed or grain and supplementing it by any kind of fresh fruit of vegetable.

This fact brings us to the important conclusion that the most perfect foodstuff ceases to be perfect after it has dried up a little. Then how can we regard as nourishment those substances that come out of ovens, kitchens and the jaws of roaring machines?

Nevertheless, animal organisms do not suffer serious harm when they are deprived of fresh foodstuffs during the few months of winter. For they make up the deficiency during the spring and summer, when all nature comes to life again. Nature has inured them to that mode of life. Dried seeds, cereals and pulses are, indeed, living foodstuffs, but they are in an inert and dormant state. Fortunately, they can easily be roused, activated and turned into perfect nutriments by being soaked in water and kept in cool air for a day or two. Therefore, by the consumption of only sprouted (activated) grains the human being has the opportunity to secure perfect nutrition in all seasons of the year and in every corner of the Earth. He can then use the remaining thousands of fresh and appetizing foodstuffs to introduce variety into his diet and to make life all the more pleasant.

Life is the organization of energy & matter. When we wish to construct a machine, we bring together all the necessary parts according to the blueprint, and as soon as the last detail is completed, the machine beings to work. That factor which puts the human factory into motion is named soul, which joining with all the other particles, completes the structure of the organism and puts it into motion.

### **The Properties of Particular Proteins, Vitamins and Minerals and of All Individual Nutritive Constituents Should No Longer Form a Basis for Discussion**

In the last section we saw that all edible vegetable bodies consist of the same elements, and that differences in their chemical and physical properties are



due to differences in their composition and molecular structure. Unfortunately, biologists have ignored this irrefutable fact and have based their whole science on the various complex compounds which they have found in foodstuffs. Intoxicated by the discoveries made in their laboratories, they have shut their eyes on that wonderful laboratory of nature to which we deliver a grain of seed so small as to be hardly visible to the naked eye and are presented, in return, in a few weeks, with the most perfect foodstuff satisfying all the needs of our organism in every respect. But they either fling away that generous bounty of nature or they burn and destroy it, after which they prepare, in their miserable laboratories, certain dead substances bearing some remote resemblance to it. These concoctions they now dignify with various names and numbers, and use them to impair, in the first place, their own organs and those of their innocent children.

Thus, having found several different substances in grapes, they say that grapes contain such-and-such constituents, as if they contained nothing else. They do the same thing in the case of all natural and non-natural foodstuffs, and the foodstuff in which they manage to find any of those constituents is recommended to us as a source of the given nutrient. As a result of such shortsightedness, the most harmful foodstuffs are represented as fully-balanced nutriments and vice versa.

Just take a pencil and make a list of the substances which biologists have discovered in the foodstuffs that are obtainable from a cow: beef, liver, brain, heart, milk, honey and cheese. Now let us see whether they can detect all those substances in clover, straw or in

common mountain herbs in an identical form. Ofcourse not. Yet no one can deny the fact that the raw materials which go to the making of the cow's body are those very plants; that is to say, the whole cow is formed entirely from those grasses. If we regard animal foodstuffs as completely adequate nourishment for a carnivorous beast, it is because the entire carcass of a prey with its skin, bones, blood and flesh and, what is more, with all its living cells intact, has a nutritive value equal to that of the grass. But what value has milk, butter or meat taken separately? Each of them has an infinitesimal fraction of the value of the common grass and that provided it is in the raw state. As to what remains of the nutritive constituents of those substances after cooking needs no amplification. Hence, may we realize the true nutritive value of milk or meat, glorified for centuries by simpleminded people! Hence, may we judge the real worth of all those advertisements that adorn the tins and cans of countless varieties of dried and debased milk. Justice demands that from now on the disseminators of such advertisements should be brought and severely punished, because the responsibility for the death of millions of children rests squarely on their shoulders.

I admit that man is forever anxious to learn new things, to penetrate into the secrets of nature, to broaden the horizon of his knowledge. It is especially important that every possessor of a factory should acquaint himself with the secrets of the raw materials needed for his factory.

Let research scientists confine their investigations within the four walls of their laboratories until the day, when they succeed in growing a plant from a seed

composed entirely of synthetic components made in their workshops. Then their wisdom will be equal to the wisdom of the nature. But our world is already full of such seeds, through which we obtain the most adequate nutriment satisfying all the essential needs of our organism. That nutriment is free from the slightest trace of defect. No substance is lacking in it; no substance is redundant; each constituent has its quality, its quantity and its function determined by the most accurate calculations.

They tell us to consume proteins, as proteins are good for the health. But how much must we consume? Is there a generally agreed figure for our daily requirements? Bricks are necessary for the construction of a building, but surely we cannot pile up bricks indiscriminately or lay them one upon another without any mortar.

New technicians have stepped into the arena. They have displaced the experienced engineer of a number of complex factories and now they wish to maintain and operate those factories themselves. Everywhere there are fragments of raw materials heaped up at random. Each of them casually takes whatever he can lay easy hands on and feeds it to the factory. One brings stones, another iron; a third one carries clay, a fourth one water. All these they lump together with no fixed plan or design, and then they go and fetch still more and more. Numerous organic and inorganic substances continually make their appearance. One feeds the machinery with a handful of a certain substance, claiming that it is useful; another fills it up with a bucketful of a second substance, asserting that it is still more useful. Thus everybody chokes the factory with

whatever he imagines to be like the components of its proper raw materials. Experiments are made, endless experiments. On the one hand, a number of silly people have set those raw materials on fire; on the other hand, everybody is in a hurry-scurry to pick up what remnants he can out of the smoldering ashes and feed them into the nozzle of the factory.

Naturally enough, the factory begins to work irregularly. The more irregularly the factory works, the more do these budding specialists multiply their efforts. They run this way and that way to look for new means and new materials. In that hustle and bustle they trample, destroy or burn the most essential chemical constituents of the raw materials, constituents which are sometimes too small to be noticed by them. When they see that their efforts are of no avail and the condition of the factory gradually goes from bad to worse, they go still further into the wilderness and find completely new substances that have no connection at all with the raw materials of the factory, and try to regulate the operations of their plant with their help. For a while, one of those new substances stops the shriek of the factory, another muffles its piercing squeak, a third one slows down the operational speeds of certain mechanisms, while a fourth, in contrast, accelerates them further. These changes appear good signs to them; they leap for joy and clap their hands like little children, and then they proceed to search for "stronger and more effective" substances. Sometimes, certain sections of the factory stop functioning altogether or they function so irregularly that they endanger the safety of their neighbors. It is then that people show their greatest dexterity. They skillfully remove and cast away those "useless" parts.

It is not surprising that all those efforts end in utter failure and one after another the factories are thrown out of work all too soon. But the bungling engineers do not lose hope.

They persist in their desperate experiments, refusing to recall the real engineer of those factories, their nature, which they have denied.

The continual comparison of the human body to a factory is not done in a figurative sense. For the human body is indeed a factory like all other factories, with this difference that it is much more complicated than an ordinary factory and its components are so small that most of them are invisible and incomprehensible to human.

Just like the engineers above, our biologists carry out experiments on human beings by the most terrible instruments on hand, by the basest foodstuffs possible, by various synthetic preparations and by all the deadly poisons known to mankind. They publish endless lists with interminable names of substances and lead people astray with their misleading recommendations. Each suggest what he fancies, each says what comes into his mind, acting at random, by the rule of the thumb. They fill thousands of volumes and flood the world with them, they thunder across the radio, they print advertisements in the newspapers. But everything they do is false, everything they say is contradictory. They represent the most harmful substance as exceedingly beneficial, but they forbid the use of that which is essential. In this medley of welter and confusion, the authors themselves grope in a maze of doubt and indecision, while their audience stands perplexed and

bewildered. In the meantime, alas, those nearest to us depart this life in millions, needlessly before their proper time.

I appeal to all noble-minded humans throughout the world to come out of their lethargic indifference if only for the sake of their own health and that of their kith and kin. Let them join hands with me so that with our unity power we open the eyes of mankind, amend the present erroneous habits of nutrition and put a stop to those terrible massacres.

Let each one of us open his/her eyes and carefully observe the shocking scandals that disgrace modern civilization. Through the wrong attitude adopted by our scientists, profiteers and speculators have stepped into the field. The most harmful and grossly adulterated foodstuffs are freely advertised as rich sources of vitamins and are openly sold to the public. They include biscuits, sweets, soft drinks such as Coca-Cola and lemonade, putrefied meats, dried milks and thousands of other diverse victuals, which have been wholly deprived of their most vital nutritive constituents and are especially prone to cause illnesses and kill people. The most curious substances are collected from here and there, mixed together, filled into tins and cartons, labeled with a long string of seemingly scientific pet names and sold to the gullible public as "dietetic" preparations at exorbitant prices. To such an extent has modern medicine been commercialized that private laboratories pay a commission of 50 percent to doctors on the charges made to the patients sent to them. One would have to fill hundreds of volumes if one wished to present a detailed picture of all the corruptions in the

world of today. At present, I am not at leisure to undertake that task.

Meanwhile, biologists find a certain vitamin during their researches. A little later they discover that it is not a simple compound, but an elaborate complex of a dozen substances, for each of which they select a name. Gradually they notice that a certain vitamin does not show its potency in the absence of others, or they observe that, on being introduced into the organism, one substance changes into another and so forth.

The effects of artificial vitamins on the human organism are apparent and contradictory. Humans lay the bricks of a house row upon row without any mortar and then, in order to rectify that mistake, they prepare a huge barrelful of inferior mortar and pour it on the building all at once. Sticking on the outside surface of the bricks, that mortar protects the building from wind and rain for a while, but it does not penetrate the joints between the bricks and, of course, it never reaches the inner layers of the structure. Sometimes an excessive quantity of that false mortar is used; then any building whose foundation is somewhat shaky simply collapses. This is precisely what sometimes happens during the injection of vitamins, when the patient dies immediately after the injection. How can one possibly represent as nutrient a substance the minutest quantity of which kills a man within five minutes of its entry into the human body? When will humans come to their senses and abandon such follies? In spite of the multitude of failures, disappointments and misfortunes, people persist in their mistaken and disastrous course, refusing to retreat a single step.

New books continually make their appearance; fresh lists and recommendations are constantly added to the old ones and an endless flood of poisons steadily flows from the factories into the organs of human. As it is, thousands of volumes have been written on nutrition and related subjects, all with different views and standpoints, different details and particulars, different lists and tables.

Let us suppose for a moment that the books written on individual vitamins and other nutritional constituents, the recommendations of nutriments and the list of specific diets are all true. We may then wonder whether this is indeed the practical system of human nutrition and whether those who wish to live in this world are under the sad necessity of having to learn all those books by heart. What will happen to the millions, then, who live in mountains and valleys, in far-off villages and hamlets, and have no opportunity to familiarize themselves with such dietary lists and tables? Must they die of starvation?

No, good friends, wake up from your torpor of indifference, for that is not the way of life destined for human. A life like that is indeed no life at all; it is a nightmare. We should bring about a complete and immediate reversal in our attitude towards nutritional problems. Publications about individual nutritive constituents and diets should be stopped and all prescriptions of artificial vitamins and poisonous drugs should be discontinued at once.

There is only one way to free mankind from that nightmare once for all, and that is to introduce a radical change into our mode of living and into our nutritional



habits. These habits must be changed in such a manner as to blend and harmonize the correct system of nutrition with the life of man. Then the choice between individual nutritive constituents will no longer serve any useful purpose and people won't give any more thought to specific diets. Only such fully balanced foodstuffs should be kept at home as have identical nutritive values; in other words every single one of the foods consumed by man should be a complete nutriment in itself.

Readers must not think that it is very difficult to lead all mankind along that wonderful path. It only seems so on the surface. Having passed through all its stages myself, I know that, far from being difficult, it is an extremely easy task, to which I am ready to devote all my time and energy.

We must create such conditions as will make it possible for rich and poor, great and small, learned and simple alike to lead a healthy life without being under the constant obligation to make a compulsory choice between the foodstuffs consumed by them. Then the choice of food will be determined by our sense of taste, the demands and wishes of which will be our unerring guide in the selection of natural foodstuffs.

We may well wonder, after all, what the biologists seek and what their ultimate aim is. Perhaps they themselves have not a clear conception of their final objective, but I will tell them. They are trying to find out what sort of substances our body needs in order to lead a healthy life. They wish to ascertain the proper function of each vitamin and each mineral in our organism. They discover that a certain vitamin

stimulates our growth, another protects us against infections, a third one strengthens the teeth, and so on. But instead of subjecting themselves to all that trouble, would it not be better if they paid a visit to the jungles of Africa just for once and asked the elephants there what kind of calcium pills they took to grow strong ivory, or what varieties of proteins they consumed to accumulate their enormous mass?

Let us suppose that after laboring incessantly for thousands of years at last they attain their desired goal. They will then be able to recognize all the constituents in a grain of wheat or in some other vegetable body and to understand the full details of their respective functions in our organism. But what they so earnestly seek is already in hand and in rich abundance, too. They have thus reached their supreme aim, the very aim that they could hardly hope to reach in their laboratories after myriads of years. What more do they seek then?

But the reader must not suppose that biologists are completely senseless people. They have reasons to act as they do and from their own point of view they are quite strong and cogent reasons. For scientists are "civilized and cultured" persons; they are neither primeval men dwelling in dark forests, nor living in folds and stables. Then how can they forgo their white bread, their delicious cakes and dainty pastries and fill their mouths with raw wheat, just like primitive savages? It is true, of course, that in turning whole and undefiled wheat into white bread or pastries, with the exception of dead starch and sugar, all its tens of thousands of nutritive constituents are destroyed, but this does not seem to worry them. They never allow us to forget that lifeless starch and sugar, too, have their

"benefits." They provide the necessary calories to supply warmth to our body, while the demands of our organs, glands and nerves are satisfied by such marvelous "scientific" resources as artificial vitamins, mineral preparations, false hormones and above all a multiplicity of poisons, excelling one another in strength and potency.

Finally, what would happen then to industries, hospitals, doctors, nurses, pharmacies, surgical instruments and other similar appliances? What efforts have not been made in procuring them and what labors have not been spent in constructing them! How could they abandon all those "achievements" for the sake of that trivial wheat? Such a step cannot even be contemplated, much less actually taken. It matters very little if thousands, nay, millions of people die of heart attacks, cancer and other diseases. Sooner or later people must die anyway, so is it not better for them to die a little earlier and free themselves from the anguish and sufferings of this world? What is the use of living to the age of 200 in a world which is getting overcrowded as it is? Do not be surprised to learn that there are people with this attitude of mind. It may indeed be asserted that the majority of mankind, blinded as they are with corpse-eating addiction, think in that way today. But I solemnly declare to the whole world that **ALL HUMAN BEINGS MUST CONSUME PLANTS IN THE RAW STATE. THIS IS THE COMMAND OF NATURE.**

Nevertheless, I do not deny that all along the guiding motive of biologists has been the desire to serve humanity. But when they see the failure of their efforts, they should change their dangerous procedure without

a moment's delay and should at once stop the publication of all books dealing with those subjects; otherwise they will surely merit the curse of coming generations. Having brought together all the contradictory facts and figures that are to be found in books on nutrition, I have carefully sifted and weighed the available evidence and have drawn the basic conclusion that so far as nutrition is concerned from now on all mankind should think alike and feed alike. In regard to this conclusion, there must be neither skepticism nor dissidence.

Therefore, since the books that have been published so far dealing with individual nutritional constituents and various specific diets have performed their task, they must all be withdrawn from circulation so that the mind of the public may no longer be muddled by their unsound and contradictory theories. In other words, all those books which deal with the functions and "benefits" of proteins, carbohydrates, fats, vitamins and minerals should be banned. So should all those dangerous publications in which attempts are made to prove that the value of certain foodstuffs lies in some particular nutrient contained in them. Even those books in which their writers try to affirm the superiority of certain kinds of fruits as compared with others must be regarded as superfluous. At most, future research may be directed towards carrying out general experiments in order to provide the necessary data to determine the degree of development and the advantages of one class of foodstuffs in comparison with other classes. For example, studies may be made to ascertain the broad differences between fruits, cereals, pulses, nuts, green vegetables and roots, if such differences do, indeed exist.

Henceforth, it should be the chief duty of all progressive writers, scientists, doctors, journalists and humanitarians to demonstrate to the general public every aspect of the enormous damage brought about by the degeneration of natural nutriments and to exhort people to submit unconditionally to the precepts of nature.

### **Real Body and False Body**

The habitual consumer of cooked food is actually a combination of two persons in one; he has two bodies. The first body, the REAL MAN, is the true man himself, who has been called into being by means of natural nourishment and is still sustained by natural nutrition. The second body, the FALSE MAN, has been brought into existence by means of unnatural, cooked, artificial food and continues to live on unnatural nutrition alone.

All those cells in the human body that, being healthy, specialized and active, maintain life and keep a person on his feet are constructed, nourished, operated and replaced entirely by natural foodstuffs. Those are the cells that give strength to the muscles, regulate the contractions of the heart, transmit the impulses of the brain to the body and produce secretions. Beside these highly-developed cells there are other cells that bear some superficial resemblance to normal cells, but have, in fact, the most elementary structure, lack the necessary machinery and mechanism for specialized functions and are generally degenerated and diseased. These cells are born, bred and multiplied entirely at the expense of unnatural and debased food.

In organism of a cooked food addict, real man occupies very little room indeed. Even in case of the thinnest person a considerable proportion of the body consists of inactive cells.

Each gland or organ needs a certain number of active and specialized cells, but as soon as the requisite complement of such cells is formed, the construction of additional cells in the given organ stops, otherwise it would grow to an inordinate size. Now, because active cells are called into being only through natural nourishment, whereas the food addict does not provide his body with the necessary quantity of natural foodstuffs, the organ is obliged to offset the resulting deficiency and keep its size within reasonable limits by amassing a certain number of inactive cells produced from cooked food. Such useless and parasitic cells abound in all the organs and systems of a food addict, not excluding the bones, the nails and the hair.

Nevertheless, the organism of some people is still able to struggle against unnatural diets for a certain period of time. Indeed, it tires its best to prevent the formation of the false man by diminished appetite, stomach disorders, nausea, vomiting, insomnia, headaches and other similar means. Short-sighted people regard such precautionary symptoms as signs of some debility of the organism, so instead of stopping the consumption of unnatural foodstuffs, they encourage their use all the more in order to "nourish and strengthen" the patient. And when under the continual assaults of "nutritious" foods the long, drawn out struggle comes to a tragic end with the defeat of the real man, the organism is forced to abandon its tenacious resistance and "adapt" itself to those

unnatural foodstuffs. This is the signal for the birth of the false man, who soon begins to devour like a wolf and grow irresistibly. Yet short-sighted people regard this growth as a sure sign of recuperation.

In course of time that resistance became weaker, and today the stage has been reached when a great many children are born with two bodies. Such children begin to develop the false man even before they come into the world. You can see the false man at every step on the buttocks and legs of women, on the fat cheeks of children, on the bulging paunches and necks of men, and elsewhere. The false man deforms the pretty figures of young maidens in their prime of life, deprives grown-up people of their capacity for work. It penetrates into the heart, kidneys, blood vessels, glands and tissues of human beings and paralyses their activities. Generally speaking, it takes the real man into its clutches and gradually squeezes and strangles him.

When a cooked food addict satisfies his hunger by consuming some fruit, it means that at the given moment the real man is satiated to the full and has no further desire for food. But the false man has received no share of the natural nutriment at all, so he demands his own special food now. What makes matters particularly unfortunate is the fact that he expresses his negative desires through the mouth of the real man. The voracious craving for cooked food is the urge of that monster and has no connection whatever with the demands of the real man. That craving changes into gluttony at the moment when the two brutish passions, addiction and negative desires, join forces.

It is here that the real man, without any thought or reflection, performs a most despicable task. He toils incessantly day after day, earns money with great pain and trouble and then, with still greater pain and trouble, he turns the natural foodstuffs that he has bought with his hard- earned money into harmful substances, introduces them into his body through his own mouth, digests them in his alimentary canal, absorbs them into his bloodstream and delivers them to that monster, his fiercest enemy, whom he rears and nurtures in his own bosom and whose abominable body he continually carries about on his weakly muscles.

Here, I must ask biologists who eulogize proteins and pin false hopes on the supposed potency of artificial vitamins, whether they do not pity those men and women who wobble and totter as they trudge along the street, barely able to drag forth the enormous weight of the false man on their feeble legs. Where is the conscience and reason of those people? Do those masses of useless fat and flesh not give them any food for thought? After all, corpulence is the fruit of their "fully-balanced" animal proteins and "digestible" white bread. Just try to deprive those fat people of their bread and meat, and feed them for a time by the most elementary laws of nature, then notice how those devilish masses melt and disappear within a few months.

When we consider how easily we can get rid of those superfluous heaps of flesh and effect complete recovery by the most simple and natural method, we may well wonder why people of high academic distinction have recourse to a motley of dangerous and senseless means, without any prospect of success.



The false man is not composed of only degenerate cells, but also of superfluous fluids, fats, concretions, salts, poisons and other harmful substances, which have penetrated and spread into all the cavities and tissues of the real man. Every illness, without exception, is called into being in the cells of the false man. It is in the cells of the false man, too, that cancer is born.

### **Diseases Are Caused By the Infringement of the Laws of Nature**

There can be only two causes for the breakdown of a factory: lack of balance in its raw materials and incidental damages coming from outside. There can be no other cause. The incidental damages sustained by the human organism from external sources (burns, injuries, poisoning, and so on) are easily understood and there are no disagreements on the methods to be employed in their treatment. Among these external damages may be included the harm done to the organism by all the self-administered therapeutic drugs, artificial vitamins, minerals, alcohol, nicotine, tea, coffee, as well as the numerous poisons that are introduced into the body with cooked food and are stored up in every organ.

The only harmonious and faultless raw materials for the human organism are the raw plants determined by nature. The minutest alteration made in those bodies means upsetting the harmony of the raw materials of the given factory; this, in turn, means dislocating the

proper operations of that factory; in other words, it means disease. In conformity with the laws of nature, this must be regarded as an axiom, about which there should never be any doubt or diversity of opinion. The raw materials of the human factory have been called NOURISHMENT.

The nature have constructed the raw materials needed for human with such precise calculations that when we put a single berry of grape into our mouth, that little berry breaks up and spreads throughout the organism to provide for all its needs without any exception. That berry first builds the rudimentary structure of the simple cells, then it constructs all the internal mechanism of the differentiated cells, provides the raw materials necessary for production, cleans and lubricates all the component parts and renews those that are damaged, replaces the aged and tired cells by youthful cells, supplies fuel to the motors and sets them in motion, gives the body the requisite warmth and energy, and performs any other task demanded of it.

The reader may wonder how it is that there are people who sometimes do not eat any fruit for weeks or months on end and yet they manage to keep alive. The answer is that, generally speaking, even the most confirmed cooked eating addict takes some raw nourishment now and then. At times the normal cells indeed starve for weeks and months, but because fruits are exceedingly condensed and highly-nourishing foodstuffs, a very small quantity of them keeps a person on his feet somehow. But if that starvation is unreasonably prolonged (for the subject himself does not feel this hunger), there appear in the organism

various disorders, sores and morbid conditions, the most serious of which is scurvy.

During scurvy there is a gradual wasting away of the cells, caused by the absence of superior nutritive constituents. Later, the walls of the capillaries begin to burst, giving rise to extravasations of blood. The gums now become livid and spongy, the teeth fall and the whole body of the patient is covered with ulcers. In the view of short-sighted people this disease is entirely due to a deficiency of vitamin C. All the cooked foods, drugs and artificial vitamins in the world have not the power to save the life of such a patient. If he does not take some fresh fruit or vegetable, his death is inevitable.

Nature has been very indulgent to human, but human takes advantage of that indulgence. The American cytologist E. V. Cowdry says: "The loss to the bodily economy of trained service by cells that have become malignant is not serious, for there are surpluses in all kinds of specialized cells which can be called upon in case of need, known as physiologic reserves. Nine-tenths of the adrenal cortex, 1/2 of the lungs, 3/4 of the liver, 4/5 of the thyroid and pancreas and all of the spleen can be removed with safety" (CANCER CELLS, Philadelphia and London, 1955, p. 11). Even the most famous cytologist in the world is so short-sighted that he does not regard the loss of nine-tenths of a gland as serious to the organism; the loss appears to him only when the given organism stops functioning altogether. But Cowdry's study comes to confirm the belief held by raw-eaters that any decrease in the intake of raw nourishment is followed by a proportional decrease in the number of active cells, and hence, in the working capacity of a given gland or organ. Very often the

organs of a cooked eater addict maintain their existence by the labor of only one-tenth or one-fifth of the normal complement of cells.

WHEN DUE ACCOUNT IS TAKEN OF THE LAWS OF NATURE THE CAUSE OF NO DISEASE REMAINS HIDDEN; everything becomes as clear as daylight. As soon as the number of normal, active cells decreases through a decrease in the quantity of natural foodstuffs consumed, the glands and organs fail in their operations and yield becomes poor, insufficient and defective, owing to the deficiency of the raw materials. As a result, the given glands and organs become ill. Again, because comparatively few active cells remain and those that do remain are starved and exhausted, the walls of the heart distend and the valves become damaged; those sensitive parts of the skin, intestines, stomach and other members of the body that are subject to constant pressure are impaired; the capillaries dilate and then burst, resulting in the ulceration of the stomach and the intestines, discharges from the mucous membranes, pyorrhea, hemorrhoids, eczema, and so on. The teeth decay for lack of adequate nourishment; the hair turns grey or falls. At the same time, with the accumulations of the poisonous substances introduced into the organism by means of cooked foods the joints are incapacitated; the walls of the blood vessels are covered with hard deposits; stone (or calculi) are formed in the bladder; sclerosis, high blood pressure, sciatica, rheumatism, gout and a host of other diseases make their appearance. Finally, it now becomes quite an easy task to explain the causes of apoplectic attacks and cancer.

No cooked eater should regard himself as healthy. The foundation of his ill-health has been laid by his addict cooked-eater mother even before his birth. His organs are degenerated and every moment they are in danger or exhausting their last reserves of energy. After reading these lines, whoever values his health and cares for his life must make a firm decision toward off that danger and repair thoroughly the damage already done to his organism. In particular, those people who suffer from obesity and high blood pressure should not hesitate for a moment, because their lives hang by a thread. They must not allow the ominous word "unexpected" to appear in their obituary notices tomorrow. That word is the most striking evidence of the "civilized" man's crass ignorance.

The little baby should never cry without a reason; he should never pass a restless night or suffer from stomach ailments, still less from a fever. Nor should he ever experience deficiency of vitamins or calcium. All these are the results of cooked foods, milks and the inferiority of his cooked-eating mother's milk. I declare again and again that it is a most cruel offence to accustom a newborn child to cooked food. Up to now this offence has been committed by all parents unintentionally; henceforth it will be regarded as a premeditated crime. Tomorrow, no parents will be able to extenuate their guilt.

Before a decision is made to undergo a surgical operation, the patient should have recourse to full raw-eating. If the damaged organ has not lost its complement of active cells completely, it may well regain its full working capacity by giving birth to healthy cells and getting rid of the diseased ones.

So long as there are any diseased cells in the human organism, there exists a strong craving for cooked food. But once the body is cleansed of its diseased cells, the sight of cooked meals fills the real man with disgust, instead of pleasure. The stronger the feeling of "hunger", the deeper and graver is the disease. In short, the desire for cooked food is a desire for disease, and the persistence of that desire signifies the persistence of disease. Therefore, in order to subdue and annihilate disease, it is necessary to starve the false man.

Cancer patients should be immediately placed on an extremely limited diet of raw food, such as a pound of apples or grapes a day. This quantity is sufficient to keep the real man alive, while the cancer cells, unable to obtain any share of it, will gradually die. The person who is condemned to certain death has no longer any right to gratify his palate at the price of expediting his end.

Let us now see what useful service can be rendered to us by the 350,000 kinds of poisonous substances which they have named drugs. Can they possibly increase the number of the differentiated cells, strengthen the weak cells or grant the disabled cells fresh capacity to work? Can they supply raw materials to the starving glands or replace the nutritive constituents destroyed by the fire? Can they strengthen the muscles of the heart or clean the blood vessels of their impurities? Can they stop the continuous flow into our organs of the filth and poisons that are introduced into our body with cooked foods? Finally, can they separate and annihilate the cancer cells one by one or bring them back to the body? Perhaps those poisons really form an integral part of our nourishment and it is

by an oversight that nature has forgotten to include them in natural foodstuffs.

The fact of the matter is that the effect of those substances are conjuring, deceptive, apparent, contradictory and invariably harmful. The vast literature on the beneficial properties of drugs is the myth of our age. An enormous world of superstitions holds all the peoples of this globe under its absolute sway and baneful medicines take upon themselves the role of talismans.

We must descend from the heights of fancy and adopt a realistic attitude towards these problems. An infinitesimally small cell in itself, has a more complex structure than all the man-made factories. This is obvious from the very simple fact that with all their concerted efforts the experts in the world have never been able to bring a single living cell into existence. And yet every organ is composed of millions of such cells. Nevertheless, an ordinary physician imagines himself a specialist of those extensive worlds. When that physician scribbles the name of some poisonous "medicine" on a piece of paper, he naively supposes that he can restore the disorganized functions of millions of factories by the prescription of a single poison. Taking hold of my little children by their hands, for years on end, I wandered from one country to another in the hope of finding that fabulous, life-giving elixir! It is with the same fanciful hope that every patient, whatever his condition, knocks at the door of his doctor today or takes his place in the hospital queue.

Whereas the only cure of every disease is entirely in the hands of the patient himself. THE CAUSES OF ALL

THE DISEASES ARE TO BE FOUND IN THE KITCHEN FIRE. WITH THE DISAPPEARANCE OF THAT FIRE THERE WILL DISAPPEAR ALL THE SUFFERINGS OF THE HUMAN. Complete raw-eating not only acts as a preventive to every kind of illness, but it also completely heals all the diseases already contracted, from the mildest to the most serious and complicated, provided that the affected organ still retains some signs of life.

In this little book, I cannot deal with this subject at length. It is sufficient to present just one example. Cardiovascular diseases are the bane of mankind today. In certain countries the mortality rate for various diseases of the heart is more than half the total mortality rate, and the proportion keeps on increasing. All the existing drugs against those diseases are purely conjuring measures. By poisoning the body, irritating or, on the contrary, deadening the nerves and stimulating the action of the heart, they deprive the organism of its remnants of strength. Witness the fact that doctors are the principal victims of heart-strokes. Yet among all the diseases cardiovascular disorders are the most amenable to treatment. Raw-Veganism will put an end to all those senseless massacres.

If the patient who is doomed to die of heart-stroke in a few weeks or months should seek refuge in the laws of nature and change over to raw-eating today, he will feel a prompt improvement in his condition almost overnight. From the very first day his blood vessels will quickly begin to lose their impurities, and the walls of his veins, as well as those of his heart and its valves, will obtain a new lease of life with a fresh complement of active cells, gradually regaining their proper elasticity and firmness. As a result, instead of dying in a



few weeks, the new recruit to raw-eating will be able to look forward with confidence to a healthy life of another 50 or more years. When the question is one of replacing a sickly life of a few weeks by a healthy life of half a century, we must not allow hesitation to creep into our hearts. It is not wise to regard deaths as sudden and unexpected. When I see the morsels of meat and bread enter the mouth of an unsuspecting victim, I picture the degeneration that will soon be taking place in the walls of his heart and his blood vessels, and every moment I expect him a heart-stroke.

Generally speaking, there are four basic causes of diseases: 1. Deficiency in the number of differentiated cells. 2. Insufficiency of the raw materials necessary for the functions of the glands. 3. The presence of foreign bodies and parasitic cells in the organism. 4. The weakening in the resistance of the cells to bacterial infection. Raw-eating grapples with all these four causes right from the beginning and offers the real solution to the problem of disease.

However, in the initial period of raw-eating, cooked-eating addicts sometimes experience various discomforts, which may give thoughtless people the false impression that natural foodstuffs exhaust the body and impair the health. This misconception is the most striking proof of the short-sightedness of the man of today. The mere idea that NATURAL nutrition may be followed by UNNATURAL and harmful results is a most absurd notion, which must be banished from our thoughts once for all.

It must be born in mind that from 40-50 kilos or more of the man weighing a hundred kilos belong to the

false man, who will immediately begin to melt away and, accompanied by its diseased cells, fats, concretions and poisons, will rush into the blood stream, so that it may leave the body through the various excretions — the stools, the urine and the perspiration. On observing foreign substances in the urine and the blood, the short-sighted man will think that they are formed from natural nutriments, whereas in point of fact they come from the false man's disgusting body, which is gradually wasting away and leaving the organism forever. That is why the transition to raw-eating must not be controlled by the usual criteria of medical science; rather, we must confidently submit to the laws of nature and look forward to the final results with patience and forbearance.

During that period there may well appear symptoms of flatulence, intestinal pains, headache, giddiness, general debility, and so on. In certain cases the urine may become turbid, the feet may swell, rashes may appear on the body and there may be dryness and itching on certain parts of the skin. All these are processes of purification and healing, so one should on no account succumb to the feeling of "hunger" and, entertaining doubts about the wisdom of the Creator, have recourse to "nutritious" dinners,—"fully-balanced" proteins and "irreplaceable" amino acids for help. Should one be foolish enough to do so, these symptoms will disappear at once, but to the detriment of one's health. The false man will then heave a sigh of relief and, laughing at the stupidity of the real man, will begin to grow once again with a new lease of life.

Such symptoms vary in occurrence and severity from one individual to another, and may even be entirely

absent in certain cases. As a rule, they are apt to be severe in elderly and corpulent people, mild in young people and completely absent in newborn children, who will begin to grow up in a normal manner. Generally speaking, in the body of an excessively fat person the false man has so squeezed and emaciated the real man under the pressure of his heavy weight that little is left of him but "skin and bones." In the initial period of raw-eating the weight of such a person will be reduced so much that those who do not comprehend the true nature of the change will begin to pity him. But this is merely an apparent picture of what is actually taking place. In the body of the raw-eater the real man has, in fact, begun to gain weight right from the first day and, after getting rid of the false man, he will continue to grow in a regular manner until his normal weight is reached. In a very thin person the increase in weight of the real man will counterbalance the loss suffered by the false man, so that there will be a net gain in weight right from the beginning.

This growth of the real man is particularly speedy in thin, pallid and weakly children. We must not expect raw-eating children to be as chubby-faced and as podgy-legged as their cooked-eating playmates, for plumpness is the sign of the false man. Raw-eating children will indeed be slim, sinewy and muscular. It is through sheer ignorance that simpleminded parents rejoice at the plumpness of their children.

When I first changed over to raw-eating, an extensive process of purification commenced in my organism. I experienced no symptoms of debility, but I suffered from pains in my intestines, the interstices between my fingers and toes began to dry up, followed by scaling

and itching, rashes broke out on my body, and on certain parts of my feet the skin dried up and peeled off in flakes. My feet, which until then often used to swell to a slight extent, suddenly became excessively swollen, and this swelling took months to subside. Then after a while my urine turned quite turbid. During the whole of that period I exercised myself by taking longer walks than I had ever taken in my life before. It was quite plain to me that, under the continuous pressure of natural nutrition and physical exercise, the concretions that had accumulated in my blood vessels and joints during 50 years of cooked-eating were beginning to melt away and vanish. In order that I might be all the more certain in my conviction, I suddenly stopped raw-eating altogether and for three days I consumed only meat dishes. On the very first day the turbidity of my urine diminished, on the second day only slight traces remained, while on the third day it totally disappeared. When I resumed raw-eating, my urine became turbid once again, but not in its former severity, and it gradually cleared up in a few weeks. The three days of cooked-eating has apparently slowed down the speedy rate of the purification of my organism. Incidentally, I made another discovery at the same time. The water taken with salty foods increased the weight of my body by three kilos in as many as one day. Fortunately, I reverted to my former weight on the fourth day after the resumption of raw-eating.

It is perhaps good for the new recruit to raw-eating to have a hearty repast after a few months of abstinence from cooked stuffs. By comparing the two systems of nutrition, he becomes all the more convinced that the path he has chosen is indeed the right one, and after that he does not dream of repeating the experiment.

The strong swelling of my feet gradually passed away in a few months. Concurrently, I also suffered from some long-standing milder swellings; these, too, subsided during the next few years and finally disappeared altogether. The same symptoms appear, more or less, in a great many raw-eaters, who write to me about them from all over the world.

More significant still was the disappearance of my piles. Chronic hemorrhoids had given me no rest or repose for some 15 or 20 years. Every day, sometimes twice a day, I was obliged to change my underclothing. The inflammation never abated; there were continual discharges of pus, mucus and blood. Even after I had changed over to raw-eating, in spite of the regularity that had been introduced into the working of my digestive organs, the condition of my piles remained almost unchanged. After every physical effort, or even after a simple walk, the irritation became so severe that I sometimes used to think that, because of the morphological changes which had taken place, perhaps the piles did not wish to yield to raw-eating and that in the end I should be obliged to submit to a surgical operation after all. But at the same time, I never lost hope in the power of nature. And indeed, a few months later the condition began to show a definite improvement. Daily irritations changed to twice a week, then to once a week, once a month and later still to once every two or three months, until finally the treatment was so successful that today, I do not feel at all that I have even suffered from hemorrhoids. The cure was especially speeded up when I began to take salads of sprouted wheat every day. Now these circumstances bring us face to face with a most important truth.

It is a well-known fact that piles are caused by the weakening of the elasticity of the rectal walls and the distention of the veins at the lower end of the bowel. The healing of piles by raw-eating is a proof that, through the replacement of the degenerated cells in the organism by active cells, in course of time the walls of the intestines and the blood vessels are gradually renewed, acquiring the necessary elasticity and firmness. What is more important still is the fact that this process takes place simultaneously in the intestines, stomach, veins, capillaries and nerves, and in every organ and gland without exception. In other words, the disordered and diseased organism of the cooked-eater is completely restored with a new complement of young, specialized and healthy cells. The increase in sexual power by raw-eating will come as a surprise to all, although in sexual activities strict moderation should be our firm principle. In sports raw-eaters will establish new and unprecedented records. This is where the age long dream of the alchemists, the elixir of life, is to be found. They are not conjuring effects obtained in a few hours by means of drugs, but fundamental processes for curing diseases through the reconstruction of the whole organism.

Provided that the cells of an organ or a gland are not wholly spent, natural nourishment enables them to restore their essential complement of cells by giving birth to new cells, and at the same time to get rid of the presence of diseased and useless cells. But there is not means at all of returning a wasted organ, such as a decayed tooth, to its former state. That is why, in matters of health, procrastination is dangerous.

The cooked-eater lives on the work of one-fifth to one-tenth of his organs and glands and yet, so long as he is able to stand on his feet, he regards himself as healthy. Worse still, the danger of being deprived of even that one-tenth hangs over him constantly like the sword of Damocles, especially when he has had a few "good" dinners.

The investigations of cytologists show that in addition to indolent cells there are found in the human body various multinucleated giant cells (polykaryocytes), uninucleated over-sized cells (megakaryocytes), and other types of degenerate cells. Such cells are "normally" present in all the organs and glands, and even in the blood stream of cooked-eaters. The research scientists who see these and a host of other aberrations in the organs of all food addicts are obliged to regard them as "normal" or "natural" occurrences.

Natural foodstuffs do not remain in the digestive organs for more than a few hours and, whether digested or not, leave the body by the normal channel, whereas cooked foods, especially those that are derived from animal sources, linger in the alimentary canal for three or four days, sometimes for weeks. Now, it is a well-known fact that immediately after death animal cells begin to decompose, releasing a large variety of poisonous substances as they do so. Therefore there is no poison-free animal foodstuff on the table of the cooked-eater. It is no wonder, then, that after remaining in the human abdomen for three or four days at a temperature of 38°C. animal foodstuffs are completely converted into poisons. Sometimes this process advances to such an extent that only after they have

ravaged the walls of the intestines and have become mixed with considerable quantities of pus, mucus and blood, do they succeed in leaving the organism. On the second day, the patient complains of a slight disorder in the stomach. The doctors recommend the use of table salt in order to prevent the occurrence of such putrefactions, as if they wished to convert the human abdomen into a barrel of salted meat. Credulous people naively believe that whatever the stomach readily accepts cannot be harmful; whereas polished rice, white bread or sugars, which are the most harmful of all foodstuffs, induce no immediate reaction in the stomach. Some even wonder what connection nutrition could have with the eyes, the skin or the nerves, as though any part of the body could carry on its functions without raw materials. Now, what substance might one possibly find in white bread, sugar or clarified butter that could give light to the eyes or organize the wonderful operations of the nerves? People advance all sorts of hypothetical conjectures to explain the causes of nervous diseases, but they do not pay the least attention to the most essential factor — the properties of the raw materials supplied to the nerves.

### **The Resistance of Man to Infectious Diseases Weakens From Generation to Generation**

The claims that the danger of infectious diseases is steadily on the decline are fallacious. Because of cooked-eating, human cells have gradually lost their power of resistance to microbes and, what is worse, they continue losing that power from generation to generation.



In this connection, I should like to quote a few passages from "Pathological Anatomy and the Pathogenesis of Human Diseases" by the eminent Soviet scientist I. V. Davydovsky, published in 1956. According to him: "There are a number of infections particular to homo-sapien (anthroponoses) that do not, in fact, occur in animals, including the most developed apes. Scientists either do not succeed in inducing experimental examples of those infections in them or else they manage to obtain very remote resemblances of only a few of them (typhoid, cholera, malaria, meningococcal meningitis, influenza, measles, jaundice, diphtheria, scarlet fever, pneumonia, rheumatism, sepsis, gonorrhea, furunculosis, appendicitis, and so on).

"The zoonoses and ornithonoses (animal and poultry diseases) that occur in humans, such as hydrophobia, encephalitis, brucellosis (Malta fever), psittacosis, smallpox, plague, tularemia, anthrax, trichinosis and others, have, as a rule, their special symptoms that are peculiar to man, whereas in animals sometimes they show only very remote reproductions of those symptoms."

It thus appears that not only do all animals, including human's ancestors, the apes, not contract specific human infections, but they are not even responsive to the deliberate attempts of research scientists to infect them with those diseases for experimental purposes. In contrast, there exist bacteria that are particular to animals and birds, but do not affect them normally, even though they are present in their organs all the time. On being transmitted to man, however, those very bacteria infect him in the most terrible and disastrous manner.

We must add to this the fact that animals are immune from all chronic diseases.

What is the reason for this striking contrast? What is it that distinguishes a man from an animal here if not his habit of nourishing himself according to the laws of "civilization" and then sitting at his desk leisurely with his legs crossed? Just picture to yourselves what it would be like if one of these fine days the cow took it into her head to become "civilized" like man, to eat her fodder after boiling it in a cauldron and, on becoming ill, to pretend that the reasons were unknown. Then if someone suggested that she ought to try nourishing herself on raw grass, she should express the fear that her body being used to cooked food, raw grass might harm her. Picture to yourselves too, what the cow would be like today if she had consumed cooked grass for thousands of years, without reflecting for a moment that what she was doing was an unnatural act. Yet this is the position into which the bigoted meat-worshippers of today have placed themselves.

The fight against infectious diseases proceeds from a completely mistaken standpoint. The decline in the death rate from infectious diseases has been achieved not by strengthening the resistance of the body, but by mitigating the external conditions that spread infections. In course of time, man's power of resistance has been so weakened that if we removed the amenities provided by modern housing, centralized water supply systems, urban sanitation, isolation of patients and so forth, and returned to the conditions prevailing 200 years ago, human would be annihilated through various epidemic diseases within a few years.

Anyhow, even today auto-infections, such as those giving rise to catarrhal conditions, develop speedily and become an inevitable disaster for all cooked-eating humanity. Taking advantage of the weakness of the false man's cells, harmless microorganisms become quite harmful. Davydovsky writes: "In the light of contemporary data on the changeability of bacteria we must regard the postulate that pathogenic bacteria may be produced from so-called nonpathogenic bacteria as quite close to reality. Thus, the bacilli of typhoid, paratyphoid and dysentery may originate from the intestinal bacilli; the real bacilli of diphtheria may develop from false bacilli. Such metamorphoses may take place in all varieties of cocci, in anaerobes, in the bacilli of plague and tuberculosis and in other microorganisms. Auto-infection is especially real at the expense of the usual inhabitants of the human body, the skin and the mucous membranes."

In a great many infectious diseases the evidence for infection is absent. Generally speaking, every infectious disease makes its first appearance in the delicate organism of some weakly person and is then transmitted to other people. In reality, every such organism is a dangerous factory for the propagation and dissemination of pathogenic bacteria. Such a factory is not to be found among raw-eaters. So the world of raw-eaters will be forever free from all infectious diseases.

Davydovsky's views on auto-infection may be summarized as follows: "The main regions of our body where the processes of auto-infection develop are: the throat, the tonsils, the vermiform appendix, the large intestine, the conjunctiva, the bronchial tubes and the urinary passages. The auto-infectious diseases are:

nasal catarrh, pharyngitis, colitis, dysentery, bronchitis, pneumonia, cystitis, pyelitis, nephritis, conjunctivitis, inflammatory skin affections,

furuncles, carbuncles, otitis, cholecystitis, osteomyelitis, post-natal endometritis, and so on. According to the data provided by F. G. Barinski (1949), in only 50 percent of all cases of scarlet fever and 15 percent of diphtheria can direct contact be established. In other words, in the great majority of all cases of diphtheria there are no proofs to show that the infection is of external sources. Again, evidence supplied by T. E. Boldyrev (1949) indicated that 53 percent of typhoid cases are of unknown origin. The role of exogenous infections gradually diminishes, giving its place to endogenous infections. Without any doubt in the future, it will be realized that the chief role is indeed played by auto-infections, especially as we are not yet in full possession of the necessary knowledge which would enable us to explain the essence of the physiological mechanisms and conditions that change the normal symbiosis of cells and bacteria into a state of infection.

"In regard to the aetiology of infectious diseases we must abandon the notions conceived in time of Koch, Ehrlich and Pasteur on the 'pathogenic' nature of the microorganisms of external and internal media. In the full sense of the word it is not the bacteria themselves that are pathogenic, but those physiological correlations which exist in the given organism at a particular moment and which are organically connected with the disturbances in its regulative systems and nervous mechanisms. There are no special 'pathogenic' microbes in nature; there are, however, no end of factors that

promote susceptibility in a normally resistant subject, and vice versa."

We can draw only one conclusion from all this. The real cause of infectious diseases is not the microbe, but the impaired condition of the normal biological processes of the organism. Microbes have always existed, they still exist and they will exist forever. The campaign to destroy and annihilate them is sheer madness. As a result of turning a blind eye to the real causes of diseases, man's organic power of resistance has been gradually reduced to such an extent that human beings no longer await for infection to come from without, but succumb to the bacteria swarming inside their bodies. For in the human organism those very bacteria that are unable to do any harm to the meanest of animals come face to face with weak, worthless, inactive cells formed from meat, bread, butter and sugar. It is no wonder, then, that they simply fall upon those cells and devour them avidly. The sensible person should cleanse his body of every single one of those useless cells, after which no microbe will dare to approach the youthful, robust and strong cells that will have come into existence from noble fruits, nuts and cereals. Here, indeed, is "the essence of the physiological mechanisms and conditions that change the normal symbiosis of cells and bacteria into a state of infection," the explanation of which Davydovsky is unable to give.

The role of antibiotics as therapeutic agents is temporary and deceptive. People are gradually becoming disappointed with them. Neutralizing the effects of bacterial activity for a short spell of time, they

weaken the cells and clear the way for stronger infections later on.

I have the most intimate experience of antibiotics. As a result of deficiency of natural nourishment my children always suffered from an irregular, persistent fever caused by auto-infection and auto-intoxication, their temperature usually fluctuating between 37.8°C. and 38 °C. I took my son to Paris and entrusted him to the care of the most eminent "specialists" there. Unfortunately, through indiscriminate experimentation with antibiotics they raised their temperature to 40-41°C. and degenerating his heart and kidneys, they finally killed him, without being able to diagnose his illness.

Exactly the same thing happened to my daughter, but with still greater violence, two years later. I placed her in the Anscharhohe Children's Hospital (Kinderkrankenhaus Anscharhohe) in Hamburg, where a Dr. Wolfgang Tiling carried out the most inhumane experiments on my poor child. Every day he drew out an enormous quantity of blood, which he subjected to various laboratory tests or injected into dozens of poor rats and rabbits, pretending that by multiplying the bacteria he wished to identify the actual organism which was responsible for the disease, but which he could not determine in his unusual clinical examinations. The higher the temperature of my child rose, the larger were the doses of the antibiotics administered and the more diverse were their varieties. With the increased doses of antibiotics the temperature rose higher and higher, until it fluctuated continuously between 39°C. and 41°C. and the signs of nephritis became strongly marked. By his "scientific" means he

speeded up the development of the disease, reducing its "normal" duration of four years to a period of only one month. He regarded the child as a dummy and frightened us into the false belief that if she was not given cortisone or subjected to internal biopsy, she would not live more than a week.

It was in those days that I came across Bircher-Benner's German treatise entitled "Nutritional Diseases" ( "Ernährungskrankheiten" , Erster Teil, 1933 ). I immediately took my daughter out of that hospital and entrusted her to the care of natural nutrition. With the sudden wave of a magic wand the temperature of my child dropped to the region of 37°-37.5 °C. and the quantity of her urine increased from 200ml to two liters a day. Within a week she rose to her feet and walked across the room to open the door for that heartless doctor, who was struck dumb with stupefaction and was so afraid of disgrace that under one baseless pretext or another he refused to give me copies of the hospital records and the clinical examinations.

If I had continued to nourish the child on a purely raw-eating diet, she would have been certainly alive today. But at that time I regarded raw food as a therapeutic means and I still had faith in artificial vitamins. In order to become closely acquainted with the nutritional system of Dr. Bircher Benner's Private Clinic, I took the child from Hamburg to Zurich and kept her in that sanatorium for 23 days. I may here mention, by the way, that unfortunately after Dr. Bircher Benner's death, his system of nutrition has been greatly modified by the introduction of cooked foods, dairy products, vitamins and other drugs. Anyhow, encouraged by the quick improvement in her condition,

I thought it was possible to restore her health partly by raw nutriments and partly by cooked foods and artificial vitamins. Anyway, we were able to extend her life by only four years.

I am myself a striking example of man's, victory over auto-infections. For over 20 years I had been suffering from chronic bronchitis to such an extent that several times a year, I invariably used to take to my bed with the most severe attacks of cold. Raw-eating, however, has changed all this and although for the last ten years I have slept under the open sky throughout the year, sometimes in the chilly winter frost of 15 or 16 degrees, with the microbes still in their places, not once have I coughed or felt the slightest indication of a cold. I should like to add by the way that sleeping in the open air in winter does not require particular heroism. All that is needed is to cover the body well and keep the face open to the fresh air. In addition, it is important to forgo cooked food so as to do away with the causes of spending sleepless nights and rolling in bed incessantly.

## **Cancer is the Result of Extreme Degeneration of Cells**

As in the case of all other diseases, the causes of cancer, too, are quite easily explained in the light of the laws of nature.

Cytologists have carried out an immense amount of research in order to discover differences between the structures of normal cells and those of cancer cells. Generally speaking, they have found that cancer cells



are cells of quite common types that are devoid of the necessary structure and capability to perform any useful work whatsoever. Their only purpose is to devour proteins (building materials) and multiply.

As we know, the cells of the false man possess precisely the same qualities. There is only one degree of difference between the degeneration suffered by the cells of the false man and the cells of cancer. As regards to location in certain circumstances, the real man succeeds in keeping the cells of the false man under his control. He spreads them in the free expanses of his organism, he fills the empty cavities with them, he disposes them under his skin, he mixes them with his normal cells and thus, for a time at least, he keeps the sensitive organs and systems of his body free from the danger of their pressure. Everybody can see with the naked eye the enormous mass of the false man, sometimes reaching a weight of 60-70 kilograms. If a few kilos of that mass were placed in any gland or organ, the activity of the given gland or organ would certainly be paralyzed under the resulting pressure. It is precisely in this way that cancer puts an end to a man's life.

The cells of the false man, like those of cancer, have been called into existence by means of the food prepared in the kitchen for the primary purpose of acting as avid consumers of such food. By the defensive efforts of the real man the cells of the false man are not able to assimilate completely the enormous quantities of the unnatural substances that are introduced into the body through the channel of addiction, and consequently a large proportion of those substances is aimlessly lost by being burnt and turned into

superfluous heat. In order to consume freely those excessive masses of food, the cells of the false man strive to obtain independence, to settle in any locality that they wish and to gorge themselves to the full. When one or several of them succeed in their efforts, they begin to devour at an unbelievable speed the foodstuffs that are proffered to them by their greedy master. Thus, beginning with one or two insignificant cells, there comes into being the monster that keeps all mankind in the clutches of its deadly terror. In none of the numerous pathological processes do we encounter a similar case where among the milliard of cells only one or two cells succumb to disease.

The clear-sighted man who has the perspicacity to occupy his mind with fundamental problems cannot help wondering at the stupid questions on which research scientists waste their time, money and energy. In order to explain the occurrence of cancer they have listed some 400 various carcinogenic agents, which, with the exception of dietary factors, have not the least connection with the basic causes of carcinogenesis. Every individual must ask himself this question: "Granted that all the poisons, rays, chronic irritations, injuries, burns, viruses, nicotine, tar and a host of other agents might, as harmful factors, be able to deprive the cells of their complex structure and their capacity for work, or to damage, to emaciate, to crush and to kill them, but by what possible means could they induce in one or two cells such enormous power of multiplication as to enable them, in a very short space of time, to topple down and then to destroy altogether the whole wonderful edifice of the human body in its entirety?"

That terrible power is diligently cooked, baked, prepared and presented to the monster by the owner of the organism himself for his own ultimate destruction. Cancer is the living proof of the extreme degeneration of cells and the inevitable result of unnatural nutrition.

During their investigations, time and again scientists come face to face with the real causes of cancer. They hold the irrefutable proofs in their hands, they look at them for a while and even confirm them, but whenever the question of changing the prevailing dietary systems comes up for deliberation, they shut their eyes in consternation, as if struck with thunder, and without tarrying for a moment they take to their heels, because they DO NOT WISH to see anything unnatural in their nutritional habits. In particular, the DO NOT WISH to criticize the bread which they eat and which for ages past they have regarded as a sanctity, without reflecting for a moment that by the time it reaches the table it has been profaned again and again by means of grinding, sifting, kneading and baking.

Cytologists clearly see that cancer is brought into existence by means of cells that are devoid of specialized structures and operational capabilities, yet in their view all the cells of the so-called healthy man (even though they are the product of unnatural nutrition) are primarily fully-developed and perfect cells that are later deprived of their normal attributes through the influence of certain carcinogenic agents. In other words, the absence of the proper mechanisms of the factory of the defects in its production are connected with every casual factor, but they have no relation whatsoever with the building materials supplied to that factory, or with the nature and quality

of the raw materials necessary for production. They DO NOT WISH TO SEE that the organs of all cooked-eaters are permanently inundated with milliards of cells that have lost their proper structures and functions. I shall now quote a few passages from Cowdry's "CANCER CELLS" from which the reader will clearly see how plain and obvious the real causes of cancer are.

Cowdry writes (p.11): "With loss in whole or in part of the specialized service function of their precursors, cancer cells lose in like measure the structural features which make that particular function possible. Structure cannot be maintained in the absence of function any more than function can be maintained in the absence of corresponding structure." Cowdry has forgotten to add the most obvious truth by which the secret of cancer would have been solved once for all. Namely, in order to maintain structure and function raw materials are essential requisites, and when those RAW MATERIALS are converted into COOKED MATERIALS, neither structure will be maintained, nor function.

For the normal growth of cells Cowdry quotes Rusch as follows: "Normal primordial cells contain many potential mechanisms which ultimately determine differentiation. These mechanisms become functionally active when the constituents attain certain quantitative levels" (p. 15). During the transformation to cancer "Carcinogens induce a change in one or more of the special functions of the cell. The resulting change is heritable." But, "Cells which have suffered from such heritable change may require the additional loss of accessory factors before becoming completely autonomous neoplasms" (p. 17). Cancer is not produced from fully-developed and specialized cells. "The egg and

the sperm are highly differentiated cells which do not become malignant and give rise to cancers consisting of sperm or egg cells multiplying without the usual restraints and invading the territories belonging to normal, well behaved cells" (p. 333).

The main activities of cancer cells are to hunt for nitrogenous substances, to devour animal proteins, to snatch away amino acids, to synthesize abnormal proteins and to carry out various other exploits of similar nature. Cancer has been looked upon "as acting like a 'nitrogen trap' removing amino acids from the body pool without permitting any appreciable return to it" (p. 39). Further down it is stated (ibid.): "Nitrogen metabolism of malignant cells seems to be carried on by taking from well-behaved cells, serving the body properly, materials sorely needed by them." The enigma would have been readily solved if the words "sorely needed" had been replaced by the words "EXTREMELY USELESS AND HARMFUL". Christensen and Henderson (1952) considered the superiority in amino acid accumulation by the carcinoma cells "a significant factor in the growth and multiplication of the neoplastic cell in a wasting animal" (ibid.). In their view the animal has been wasted not from the absence of natural foodstuffs, but from deficiency in the quantity of amino acids.

Cancer cells continuously synthesize proteins. Cowdry writes (p. 152): "Malignancy has often been considered to be associated with an abnormality of protein synthesis and the possible formation of abnormal proteins. There is a continuous net synthesis of protein and nucleoprotein to give new cell substance in growing tumors, while the synthesis of these

materials in normal nongrowing tissues is balanced by an equivalent breakdown." In another place he quotes Caspersson (1950): "Between the malignant tumor cell and the normally growing cell there seems to exist a fundamental difference in regard to the development of the system for protein formation. In the malignant tumor cell the endocellular inhibitory mechanism, which normally limits the activity of the protein-forming system, has more or less ceased to, function, leading to specific alterations in the cytochemical picture" (pp. 10-102). Is there any need to emphasize that the proteins in question are not the proteins obtained from grapes or apples, but those cooked or baked in the kitchen and rejected by the normal cells?

Further scientific investigations have shown that the quantity of fats in cancer cells is above normal, while that of vitamins and minerals, on the other hand, is below normal.

Cowdry admits that "Cells, malignant and otherwise, are almost inconceivably complex little individuals. Perhaps each may have as many as 10,000 different biochemical constituents, ranging from inorganic ions to the most complex proteins and nucleoproteins, which interact directly or indirectly with each other...the balance of activities in a living cell, that is the overall overt expression of the life of the cell, must be a function at any time of very complex kinetic interactions between these materials. To define the state of any cell completely, one would need to describe in kinetic terms the multiple relationships involved. Since it is not feasible to determine quantitatively more than a few variables at a time, we can obtain but a very limited view of the whole complex situation. The mathematical

formulations dealing with 4 or 5 component systems present tremendous difficulties, let alone those dealing with thousands of variables" (pp. 151-152). Thus our scientists, in whose hands rests the destiny of all mankind, know infinitesimally little about the structure of cells. Yet, in spite of the paucity of their knowledge, they ignore the nature that has constructed those complex cells and they induce people to believe that by means of their own precise computations they can determine the exact qualitative and quantitative requirements of those cells as regards to proteins, fats, carbohydrates, vitamins, minerals, and so forth.

They even go so far as first to disdain the wisdom of the chief engineer by not approving of what he has ordained, and then to concoct various substances in their factories and offer them to us. Let the reader decide for himself whether their actions are laughable or deplorable.

Considerable evidence has been collected by research scientists to show that frugality or dietary restrictions prevent, or at least limit, the incidence and growth of cancer. During the First World War under the severe food rationing then in force in Denmark, Russia, Germany and Austria cancer deaths were fewer than after rationing was abolished at the end of the war. In the opinion of Hindhede (1925) overfeeding contributed to this subsequent increase in the incidence of death.

Cowdry cites examples from experiments conducted on animals: "Credit is given to Moreschi (1909) by McCay (1947) for extending the work of earlier British investigators tending to show that dietary restriction prevents, or slows down, the growth of tumors in

animals. Sarcomas transplanted by Moreschi into mice took in rough proportion to the amounts of food supplied. Mice on restricted diets lived longer and transplantation of tumors into them was more difficult than into fully fed mice.

"McCay and his associates have made quite remarkable studies on rats retarded by reducing the energy of the diet to that adequate for maintenance, but insufficient for growth. One group was thus held young for more than 700 days and another in excess of 900 days without being allowed to grow to maturity, notwithstanding the fact that the mean length of life of this sort of rat under usual conditions is approximately 600 days. When given sufficient calories the retarded rats mature and may live a total of 1,400 or more days — over twice their normal life span" (pp. 394-395). Again, according to McCay, Sperling and Barnes (1943) "development of tumors was negligible in rats that were retarded in growth until after they had been allowed to attain maturity" (p. 396). What wonderful results would not be obtained if those rats were fed on a restricted diet of exclusively raw foodstuffs.

Further experiments showed that 150 cases of tumours developed among 198 rats fed on "normal" diet, as against only 38 tumours among 200 retarded rats — animals partially deprived of the so-called normal diet. Until when must man persist in regarding as normal a diet which spreads such ruthless slaughter and shortens the duration of life several times?

Efforts have been made at various times to elucidate the relationship between body weight and cancer mortality by reference to life insurance statistics. In



1913, a joint committee of the Association of Life Insurance Medical Directors and the Actuarial Society of America dealt with 774,672 policies purchased by males aged 20-62. It was then seen that for men taking insurance at 30-44 years of age the mortality rates from cancer were for overweights 37, for those of standard weight 32 and for underweights 24, calculated as per 100,000. For the older group of 45 years and over, the

corresponding rates were 156, 144 and 120, respectively. According to the records of the Union Central Life Insurance Company, analyzed in 1932, the following were the cancer mortality rates, starting from 25 percent or more overweight, to 50 percent underweight: 143, 138, 121, 111, 114 and 95, the figure of 111 referring to "normal" weight. Still more recently, according to the Statistical Bulletin of the Metropolitan Life Insurance Company (1951), the mortality of the overweight males from cardiovascular-renal disease was half as much again as the standard and that from diabetes was about four times the standard. These are the bounties that the false man bestows upon humanity.

Between 1900 and 1950 the increase in the mortality rates for cardiovascular diseases and cancer in the United States of America were as follows. Within 50 years the mortality rate for cancer has increased from 64 to 139.6 per 100,000 population, while that for cardiovascular diseases had advanced from 244 to 478.1. On the whole, in 1950 out of 803.9 deaths per 100,000 population from ten leading causes, cardiovascular diseases and cancer accounted for 617.7. Still more significant are the latest figures available, referring to the year 1964. The death rate for cancer has now advanced to 151.3, while that for

cardiovascular diseases has risen to 508.6, giving a combined figure of 659.9 out of a total of 939.7 from all causes. These are the amazing results of the "progress" of medicine; the shocking outcome of the multiplicity of doctors, hospitals and drugs; the inevitable products of the "refinement and purification" of foodstuffs. One may well imagine the state of affairs if the present "progress" continues for another 50 years.

According to the official statistics of the United States of America for 1964, only 1.4 percent of the total number of deaths were ascribable to "Symptoms, senility and ill-defined conditions". In this category senility is a mere conjecture, of course, because among those who consume cooked food nobody reaches old age. Whereas under really civilized conditions! barring accidents and mishaps, all mankind would die at an advanced old age.

Among wild animals in natural surroundings the occurrence of cancer is unknown. After subjecting captive monkeys to degenerated food for prolonged periods of time, however, it has been possible to observe one or two tumors resembling cancer. "The only large group of organisms for which evidence of the occasional occurrence of cancer is wholly absent inhabits the depths of the ocean," declares Cowdry (p. 196). This is because the destructive hands of mankind have not reached them. Their immunity is all the more remarkable in view of the fact that their world is much larger than ours, both in area and in population.

As we said, during their research, scientists come face to face with the basic causes of cancer, they look at them and confirm them, and yet they pass by them with

complete indifference, as if their quest were something else. "The idea that some dietary components ingested in excessive amounts, or by their absence may cause cancer in man, is gaining ground from another source.

Experimental alterations in the diets of animals may make all the difference in the ensuing presence or absence of cancer" (p. 220).

They even perceive directly the effects of natural foodstuffs. Cowdry is quite explicit on this point: "Finally the fact is beginning to emerge that there is less predisposition to tumor development in some animals when they are fed natural foods than when they are fed highly purified foods. Silverstone, Solomon and Tannenbaum (1952) observed that fewer benign hepatomas developed in male DBA mice on a diet of Purina Laboratory Chow made up chiefly of natural food than in others on a diet consisting of semi purified components, mainly, casein, cornstarch, partially hydrogenated cottonseed oil, synthetic vitamins and a mixture of salt. Moreover, semi purified diets given to C3H male mice enhanced the development of benign hepatomas. The difference in tumor development is correlated with noticeable differences in caloric intake, in body weight, or in the proportion of protein, fat, vitamins and minerals in the diet. The authors are careful to point out that one should not assume that other types of tumors respond differently" (pp. 403-404).

"Engel and Copeland (1952) found that weaning AES and Sprague Dawley rats fed natural foods (stock diets) developed fewer mammary tumors induced by the carcinogen, 2- acetylaminoflurene, than those fed

semipurified diets. The difference was considerable" (p. 404).

The reader undoubtedly observed what type of food they give to experimental mice: highly-purified materials such as casein, starch, cottonseed oil, synthetic vitamins and salts. The mixture of these substances is misnamed "normal diet" by research scientists. They collect 100 percent cancer-free mice from the fields and imprison them in cages, treat the poor creatures like "delicate" children, inbreed them with each other, feed them with the "normal diet" and after a few generations turn them into what they call "pure inbred strains of mice". According to them, those "inbred strain of mice" are in a special pathologic condition, in which up to 80 percent of some strains are susceptible to "spontaneous" tumors of "unknown causes". All cooked eaters are in an exactly similar sort of pathologic condition.

Let us now see whether scientists are able to draw any useful conclusions from the above striking evidence. The answer is unfortunately in the negative. Indeed, Cowdry is at great pains to reject the most valuable data, lest any of his readers should be foolish enough to think of forgoing one or other of the countless varieties of foods and drinks, which are commonly regarded as the fits of civilization. This is what he says: "Caution is necessary in reading into the production of human cancer data on animals especially in relation to diet. Man, except at the near starvation level, is an omnivorous eater accustomed to the ingestion of a large variety of foods gathered from many quarters of the world; whereas animals are adjusted to rather uniform and simple diets of local origin" (p. 220).

Let the reader's judge for themselves in what enormous misconception the author is.

"Granted artificially accentuated hereditary susceptibilities to cancer in these secluded, pampered and protected, closely inbred strains of mice, how then are the cancers actually produced in them?" asks Cowdry (p. 350), without being able to find an answer to the question.

"Recognition of strong organ-specific hereditary susceptibility in certain strains of mice highlights our ignorance as to the nature of the carcinogens to which the cells are susceptible. These mice lead a very sheltered existence in cages. They are usually kept in air- conditioned rooms and their diet is remarkably constant. They are not exposed to any known physical or chemical or biological carcinogens" (pp. 349-350). Cowdry deliberately shuts his eyes to the fact that the real physical, chemical and biological carcinogens are the very conditions that he himself has created for those poor mice. These include depriving them of their natural environment and nourishment, isolating and shutting them up in secluded cages, sheltering, pampering and protecting them, inbreeding them artificially, keeping them unperturbed in air-conditioned rooms and feeding them with casein, cornstarch, cottonseed oil, synthetic vitamins and salts.

Elsewhere, Cowdry brings two tables of experimental data to show modifications in cancer development by alteration in (a) dietary protein and essential amino acids and (b) dietary B vitamins. He then makes the following comments: "Vitamins and essential amino acids can modify cancer production... To explain these

and other findings is difficult. It should not be assumed that the particular dietary substance in deficiency or excess acts directly on the tissue in which the neoplastic change takes place" (p. 401). This is clearly a rejection of the available data. It is tantamount to saying that the satisfactory or unsatisfactory operation of a factory must not be supposed to have any connection with the harmony or disharmony of the raw materials supplied to it.

"It would be altogether premature to concoct some cancer preventive diet for man on these findings, as Greenstein (1947) has rightly warned," writes Cowdry and then adds: "For one thing the human life span is so much longer than that of these experimental animals that adherence to such a hypothetical diet would not be feasible over the many years, amounting in some cases to almost a quarter of a century, of the periods of latency in carcinogenesis" (p. 401). Nevertheless, "Long continued underfeeding in animals definitely reduces the incidence of several kinds of spontaneous tumors" (p. 429).

"Available data relate mainly to the incidence of tumors and not to their rate of growth after they have got started. The few instances in which growth is modified by dietary factors are insufficient evidences on which to base any therapeutic measures in the present state of our knowledge" (p. 402). It seems to us that Cowdry is not interested in reducing the incidence of tumors; he is interested only in the problem of finding therapeutic measures for the cure of cancer and that not through the rectification of our nutritional habits, but through the agency of some fanciful pill or other.

It is interesting to know when and where scientists will at last perceive the real causes of cancer. So far they have discovered some 400 "carcinogenic agents", about which Cowdry says: "In probably less than one percent of the cancers faced by physicians are the actual carcinogens, or combination of carcinogens, detectable" (p. 390). Against this we have already seen how "normal" (unnatural) diet promoted tumors in 80 out of 100 cancer-free mice in one case and 150 out of 198 in another case. The partial restriction of that diet reduced those 150 tumors to 38; its rationing considerably inhibited the frequency of cancer among whole nations and its replacement by natural nutrition tended to prevent the development of cancer altogether. One might have expected that Cowdry would now regard natural nutrition as the answer to the problem of combating cancer and would stop wasting his time on futile investigations of all other carcinogens. Instead, he is not even ready to place the only cause of cancer, faulty nutrition, among his other carcinogenic factors. He calls it merely a "modifying" factor and underrates it by baseless arguments. Being still puzzled by the behavior of malignant cells, he writes (p. 43):

"It goes almost without saying that an Aristotle, or a Darwin, if he were with us today, might be able to put together all the facts as we know them about cancer cells and supply an explanation of their malignant behavior. Perhaps in the years to come this will be done and we shall wonder why we remained blind for so long. In the meantime, we make halting progress learning a little here and there." But I beg to point out that neither an Aristotle is needed here, nor a Darwin. It is sufficient for Cowdry to come out of the confines of his laboratory and, forgetting its existence for a moment, to direct his

eyes towards the stars, the sun, the moon, the trees and the flowers, to plunge mentally into their mysteries and to perceive with what precise regularity the whole world revolves. Can any scientist destroy that world and construct his own world in its stead? Scientists destroy that living, that moving world and present humanity with a world of their own construction, with their bread, their amino acids, their artificial vitamins and their synthetic salts. It is interesting to know whether after reading these lines, scientists will still place their own knowledge above the wisdom of Earth's nature.

Further on Cowdry enumerates a great many cases of the spontaneous disappearance of malignant tumors and finally draws the following conclusions (p. 545):

"1. Some very small primary cancers occasionally appear in large numbers in the breast, prostate and uterus. Many of these do not develop, remain latent for years or spontaneously regress completely.

"2. Alterations, usually temporary, in the size of well-developed cancers are not infrequently seen. These may be brought about by the operation of many factors affecting the volume of the malignant cells and of the stroma.

"3. Unexplained alterations in the type of malignant tumors occasionally occur for no evident reason.

"4. There are several examples on record of the disappearance of neuroblastomas in children. In some of them this is correlated with progressive differentiation of the malignant cells for reasons unknown.



"5. A few verified cases of the complete regression of cancers have been described which cannot be attributed to the treatment given. Evidently, some kinds of malignant cells are in extremely rare cases controlled by physiological mechanisms."

What could be the cause of the spontaneous regression of tumors, if not some fortuitous and imperceptible change in the nutritional habits of the patient? There can be only one method for the successful treatment of cancer. The tumor must first be deprived of degenerated foodstuffs, and it must then be literally starved and killed by reducing the intake of even natural nutriment to a minimum. In case of necessity, normal cells, too, may be kept in a state of semi-starvation for a certain period of time. After the disappearance of the tumor they can easily be restored to their former strength again.

### **The Labor and Expense of Preparing Cooked Foods Are Nothing but Sheer Waste**

As we have already seen, the real man lives on raw food alone. All the cooked foods and drinks consumed in the world are aimlessly lost. The money spent on them is wasted in vain. At first sight this statement may seem unbelievable, but it is the simple truth, the proof of which I have obtained by my own personal experience.

In the beginning, we thought that we should have to increase the intake of raw nutriment in the same proportion as we reduced the consumption of cooked food, but we soon realized that we were mistaken. Although in the initial period there was quite a large demand for natural foodstuffs in order to restore the

persistent losses suffered by the body and to reconstruct the organs by reinforcing them with fresh complements of active cells, later on that demand steadily decreased.

We were surprised, too, at the small quantity of food that our daughter Anahit consumed. Her mother, with her preconceived fear of malnutrition, used to compel her to eat more, but the child persistently refused to do so. Gradually, it became clear to me that fruits and cereals in the raw state are extremely concentrated nutriments of the highest quality and, hence, a very small quantity of them fully satisfies the needs of our organism. That is why a raw-eating child should never be compelled to eat more than he wishes. It is no fairy tale when we hear of a person subsisting for months on end on a date or a walnut a day. Cooked-eaters can regale themselves on platefuls of cooked meals, because they contain no nourishment in the full sense of the word.

Herbivorous animals in their turn consume huge quantities of grass, because to a large extent that grass is composed of roughage; the real nutrients in it are in a scattered state and in very sparse amounts.

Those animals empty their bowels of masses of roughage several times a day, whereas the normal raw-eater feels the need of only one motion a day. Excessive flatulence, the presence of undigested remains of fruit in the faeces and the demand to go to stool more than once a day are signs of over eating, which the temperate raw-eater must certainly avoid. The quantity of fruit that I normally eat is no more than that consumed by any cooked-eater who is fond of fruit. To

this I add a plateful of corn salad a day, which serves to close the nutritional gap that exists in all cooked-eaters, due to an insufficiency of natural foodstuffs. In this simple fare there is no room, of course, for all the degenerated food that I formerly took.

What would be the picture if the whole world should suddenly come to its senses and adopt the natural laws of nutrition? Even if the production of fruit stayed at its present level, after allowing each person a plateful of vegetable or corn salad a day and thus satisfying the nutritional demands of the whole world to the full, there would remain as unwanted surplus all the animal foodstuffs, sugar, tea, coffee, cocoa, alcoholic and non-alcoholic beverages, tobacco, margarine, as well as the greater part of the pulses and cereals consumed today.

Let us now see what happens, after all, to all this degenerated food that is consumed in the world at present. It is, in fact, disposed of in three ways.

1.Owing to deficiency in the complement of specialized cells, the real man is obliged to tolerate the presence of a certain number of parasitic cells formed from cooked food, in order to maintain the minimum bulk of his organs and systems.

2.An enormous quantity of degenerated food is consumed by the false man.

3.Regardless of whether the individual consists of only one body or whether he is a combination of two bodies (as shown by his relative thinness or stoutness), the redundant portion of the food, which is introduced into the organism by way of addiction and which is

beyond the assimilative power of the cells, simply burns away and leaves the body through various channels. The quantity of food thus wasted comprises a huge proportion of the total intake of foodstuffs.

The most deplorable aspect of the question is the fact that the specialized cells spend a great deal of the energy that they obtain from natural nutriments to break down the foodstuffs of the false man, to absorb them into the blood stream, to ensure the smooth working of the excretory organs and to drive out of the body the harmful effects of cooked foods. For example, having worked incessantly all day long, the active cells are entitled to a little rest; instead, they are obliged to toss in bed till the break of day so as to expel from the organism the extra calories greedily introduced into the body by the false man.

In the past, I was given to gluttony and meat addiction to an extraordinary degree. As a result, I had suffered from insomnia all my life. I do not recall ever having gone to sleep before midnight or having once woken up early enough to see the sunrise. I used to keep awake till three or four o'clock in the morning and get up at eight or nine with a heavy head. Fortunately, after adopting raw-eating my insomnia entirely disappeared, but if I ever try to eat a big dinner in the evening, I am obliged to stay awake till daybreak. Ever since she was 2 years old, Anahit has never woken up during the night.

The vitamins and salts found in cooked foods are false, dead, unbalanced and harmful. Cooked foods are nothing but broken building materials and wrong fuel; The useless cells formed from such building materials

are an unwanted burden on the normal cells. The heat that is obtained from such fuel is excessive and harmful, while the energy generated from it (motive energy) is superfluous and worthless. This energy aimlessly puts into motion the motors of the factory outside working hours; it forces the heart to work at double its normal rate; it disturbs the rest which the vital mechanisms of the whole factory sorely need, tiring them instead and wearing them out in vain. Insomnia is one example of its harmful effects.

What happens when ill-advised doctors develop methods of reducing obesity? They plan an all-round restriction in the daily intake of food, as a result of which their lists of forbidden foodstuffs include such essential and highly-nutritive articles of diet as walnuts, almonds, raisins, dates, figs, bananas. In other words, they reduce the weight of the person under treatment at the price of emaciating and weakening him all the more, and thus seriously impairing his health. In such cases, by the reduction of degenerated foodstuffs, the false man loses merely some of its superfluous fuel, whereas by the restriction of natural foodstuffs the normal cells are deprived of some extremely essential nutrients. It follows, then, that the false man stays firm in its place, while the real man is emaciated all the more.

We meet with a very amusing example of the effect of restricted diet during the study of cancer. In discussing this question Cowdry states: "It is apparent that reduction in breast cancer incidence, brought about by dietary restrictions, is connected with decreased ovarian activity in mice" (op. cit. p. 398). What more do we want? The cause of breast cancer has thus been discovered. It now remains for doctors to put

a complete stop to ovarian activity in women in order to save them entirely from cancer of the mammary glands.

But surely there is a quite simple explanation of what really happens. The THOUGHTLESS LIMITATION of the calorie intake has two contrary effects on the organism. On the one hand, the restricted consumption of degenerated foodstuffs inhibits the formation of cancer, while, on the other hand, the reduced intake of natural foodstuffs interferes with the normal activity of the ovaries.

Medical science is full of such deplorable contradictions. When a certain disease draws towards itself the harmful currents of unnatural foodstuffs, the organism of the patient acquires partial immunity from some other disease. For example, people who suffer from diabetes, arteriosclerosis and certain infectious diseases are less subject to cancer. Insane experiments have even been made to subject people to the influence of various bacteria for the alleged prevention of cancer. The same thing takes place on a smaller scale during vaccinations, when by inducing milder forms of a disease children are safeguarded against serious attacks later on. The moment humans decide to safeguard the health of their children by natural laws, such unnatural measures will become unnecessary, innocent children will be freed from hazardous vaccines and vaccination will pass into history.

Experiments show that once the false man has been called into existence, partial dietary restrictions are not able to check its development. Even a 10-15 percent degeneration in foodstuffs is sufficient to keep it alive. The sensible man should beware of providing that

monster with a single grain of nourishment. I have completely cleared the joints of my feet of all gouty concretions, but if at any time I chance to eat meat, a few hours later hammer blows inform me that uric acid has penetrated into the joints of my big toes. I often used to make these experiments in the early years of my studies on raw-eating. Obviously, the sites cleared of uric acid are still empty and the ways that lead to them are wide open. As soon as a morsel of meat is introduced into the body, it is converted into uric acid, which then hurries to occupy its appointed place.

The cells of the false man do not retreat with ease, either. They lie in ambush, half- dead, but expectant. No sooner does a piece of degenerated food reach them than they begin to revive and multiply. The control of body weight should be handed over entirely to natural foodstuffs. The person who suggests that too much slimming is not good for your health is, in effect, recommending you to nurture and nourish dozens of kilos of sick and parasitic cells in order to maintain the plumpness of your body. Simultaneously with killing the false man, natural nutrition will, slowly but surely, increase the weight of the real man to the normal standard demanded by nature.

After getting rid of those useless masses of flesh, the man who had formerly loaded his body with 40-50 kilos of diseased cells and could not climb up one step unaided by a support will now be able to run up mountains without turning a hair. Such a person should never worry over his rapid loss of weight; on the contrary, he should be glad of it. A sensible person should not tolerate a single grain of useless flesh on his body. In short, everybody should at last realize that by

the introduction of each morsel of cooked food into his body he nourishes the false man, his remorseless enemy, his callous executioner; he sustains all known and unknown diseases; he paves the way for his own death.

In the opinion of a cooked-eater one must eat well in order to maintain good health. In his view an empty stomach means a hungry body. He does not know that the man with the full stomach is really a sick man. His stomach finds it difficult to expel the unnatural foodstuffs in the proper time. The raw-eater's stomach, on the other hand, is always empty or, at any rate, it is so light that he does not feel the presence of anything there. He feels the fullness of his bowels, because that is where the food that he has eaten is immediately transferred. Even excess food does not lie in his stomach for long; it quickly passes into the intestines and, digested or undigested, leaves the body without causing the least harm to the organism.

Therefore, no gases are ever generated in the stomach of a raw-eater. If an excessive amount of food is consumed, gases may be generated in the intestines, but they are inclined to leave the body by the normal route. The raw-eater sees the difference between the two systems of nutrition all the more clearly when he tries to have a good dinner after a few months abstinence. It is then that he wonders how he could ever have dragged on such a sickly and miserable existence and have regarded that disgusting mode of life as normal.



## **The Medicine of the Cooked-Eater is an Entirely Erroneous Science**

As we saw, diseases are brought into being by the dissipation of the integral raw materials of the human factory. Therefore, health can only be recovered if the integrity of those materials is restored. But what is the basis of the entire activity of modern medical science? What is it exactly that doctors do perform? They make vain attempts to restore that integrity by means of degenerated foodstuffs, artificial vitamins, salts, hormones and a multitude of poisonous concoctions, and at the same time they remove and cast away whole glands and organs that have become irreparably damaged and incapacitated as a result of the disintegration of the natural raw materials.

All mankind lives in a state of terrible ignorance. In the opinion of cooked eaters, the consumption of cooked stuff is something quite natural, while nourishment by the laws of nature is an experiment, and a dangerous experiment at that. In reality, man have unwittingly destroyed the PERFECT BALANCE developed by nature, and for thousands of years they have been making SENSELESS EXPERIMENTS by means of cooked foods, artificial preparations and poisonous substances to find a new balance, their own balance. The immediate results of those experiments are the numerous diseases that prevail in the world today.

When I invite people to adopt raw-eating, I do not propose a new experiment. On the contrary, I urge them TO PUT A STOP TO THE ABSURD EXPERIMENTS

THAT ARE ALWAYS IN PROGRESS AND TO RETURN TO THE NATURAL WAY OF LIVING.

Therefore, provided that he is not devoid of common sense, the reader should not wait for others to carry out that "new experiment" and inform him of the result. He should immediately stop his dangerous experiments and turn to the normal way of life.

The final products of all those experiments, the masterpieces of man's research laboratories, are the pills and powders with which scientists wish to feed the world, whereas the masterpieces of nature's laboratory are the wheat, the walnut and the apple. We must all make a choice between these two. All cooked foods are artificial substances deprived of their natural qualities. They have as much nutritive value as the widely advertised vitamin tablets and food extracts.

There are many species of living beings, they have neither doctors, nor hospitals and pharmacies, yet, with the exception of those that are under the care of man, they live without succumbing to illnesses and complete their proper span of life corresponding to their physical constitutions, varying from a few days to hundreds of years. Because of the perfect structure of his body, the human being should enjoy a longer and healthier life than any other creature on this earth. Even in the absence of complete raw- eating, there are instances on record of humans being able to reach the ages of 150-180 years, merely by living under conditions where extreme degeneration of foodstuffs is avoided. The very fact that most people live less is a clear indication that something is wrong with their way of life. Animals feed mostly on the green leaves and stalks of plants.

Mankind has, at its disposal, the most wholesome and concentrated nutriments of the highest quality that, having passed through the leaves and stalks, the trunks and branches of those plants, have come together in their seeds and fruits.

The time has come for biologists to admit that they have deviated from the correct path and are conducting their investigations in wrong quarters. They must confess, moreover, that it is not possible to compensate the losses in natural nutritive constituents by artificial preparations; that poisons have not the capacity to restore the degenerations of the various organs; that our organs and glands are inseparable parts of our body and so they must not be mutilated or removed. Today, I am showing them a very simple and easy method of relieving the human body from all diseases effectually and conclusively. IT IS THE DESTRUCTION OF THE DISEASED AND USELESS CELLS OF THE BODY, BY CUTTING OFF THE SUPPLY OF UNNATURAL FOOD, AND THEIR REPLACEMENT BY HEALTHY AND SPECIALIZED CELLS PRODUCED FROM NATURAL NUTRIMENTS. In order to be fully convinced of the validity of my arguments, they merely need a few months labor.

What should be the aim of doctors and biologists, if not the freeing of mankind from disease? Raw-eating is the way to reach that aim.

They must declare forthwith whether they do, in fact, wish to see a world free from disease. If they can prove that their own calculations are more accurate than the calculations made by nature, and that raw-eaters throughout the world succumb to illnesses instead of

recovering their health, I shall immediately retire from the arena in company with my books and shall then hold my peace. Otherwise, surely they cannot force mankind to put up with diseases merely to keep the doors of the hospitals and pharmacies open.

They must reconcile themselves to the thought that henceforth the preparation of cooked foods and their recommendations will be regarded as crimes against humanity as a whole, and "treatments" by means of poisons as the sorcery of the cooked-eating age. Wise and humane doctors would immediately stop those recommendations and invite people to submit to the ordinance of nature. The hands of the doctor who has a spark of conscience left in his heart should tremble on writing down the names of poisonous substances and artificial vitamins, and his lips should quiver on pronouncing the names of cooked foodstuffs. Their operations are tantamount to passing the death sentence on innocent people. Let this be realized by all parents as well.

Perhaps some of my readers may not like my tone of writing. In their opinion, my expressions should preferable be more scientific (adorned with a Latin terminology unintelligible to most people), more conciliatory (complaisant), more serious (hypocritical), more compromising (unscrupulous), more courteous (lying) and more tactful (defeatist). But I prefer to be decisive, sincere and bold. And that is how I shall be, even if I find the whole world against me. I am confident that I shall be supported by all sensible people and vindicated by future generations.

When I consider the recommendation of chicken soup, the yolk of the egg, fried liver or stewed fruit to invalids, and especially to little children, a criminal act, I am not making a slanderous accusation. Nor do I sin against the truth when I regard as sorcery all those medical operations in which, instead of cleansing the blood vessels of the patient who is standing upon the threshold of death by the help of natural nutrition, strengthening the muscles of his heart and granting him a new lease of long life, they widen his vessels by poisonous irritants, stimulate the functions of the heart by "the lashes of the whip", reduce the quantity of the blood by blood-letting or degenerate and dilute it by artificial means. Bircher-Benner and a great many other conscientious scientists too, have regarded such operations as sorcery, deceit and buffoonery.

Surely I am not guilty of immodesty when, relying upon my personal, extremely limited means, I carry out painstaking investigations and then, on the basis of my discoveries, I declare that cytologists are guilty of insanity when they first burn thousands of nutritive constituents in natural foodstuffs and subject the cells to extreme degeneration, and then waste millions of public money in vain attempts to return to those cells ALL THEIR LOST MECHANISMS AND FUNCTIONS by the discovery of a SINGLE ARTIFICIAL SUBSTANCE.

Let us take as an example, the doctor to whose care I had committed my two adorable children. First of all, under the pretext of aiding their digestion and sustaining their strength, he forbade them raw fruit and recommended compotes and "nutritious meals" instead. Later regarding the auto-intoxications and auto-infections resulting from those recommendations as

malaria, he prescribed terrifying doses of quinine and, still later, by means of innumerable examinations and experiments, the most rigorous of "diets" and enormous quantities of various drugs and modern antibiotics he deprived the children of their last reserves of energy. Such a doctor was surely guilty of the MOST ABOMINABLE CRIME, even though he did everything unintentionally. Now, in order that he may not repeat the same offence against other children, we must bring his guilt home to him and make him realize that he is guilty of the most heinous crime. If the drugs that my children took in 14 years were used outright, a whole army would be completely annihilated.

The position is more or less the same today. In this age of scientific progress, I still see numerous pallid, weakly children whose mothers resort to every kind of encouragement and threat to force them to eat rice, meat, eggs, bread, honey, butter and pastries, while at the same time they strictly forbid them cucumbers and bananas for "being indigestible", cherries and grapes for "causing diarrhea", and mulberries and melons for "giving rise to fever". How can I tolerate with indifference this deplorable state of affairs?

Everybody knows how complex the structure of the human organism is. A grain of corn has precisely the same complex structure. When we make it sprout, it becomes an active and thriving body that lives and breathes like a human, except that it cannot talk and walk. The thousands of substances that are indispensable for the regular operation of all the large and small components of our body are accumulated in it in their requisite quantities and by the most precise calculations. When we turn the living wheat into bread,

we destroy all the substances in it save its ashes: the dead starch and sugar. Imagining those ashes to be real nutriment, the well meaning mother gives them to her child, but she is afraid to give him the living wheat.

Similarly, all the cooked foods in the world, which short-sighted people regard as good nourishment, are nothing but motley heaps of odoriferous and highly-seasoned ashes. The vitamins and salts discovered in them by biologists are unnatural, lifeless substances.

As soon as the living vegetable cell is cooked, it stops being nourishment; it come out of its natural state and turns into something artificial. When a mother gives her little baby his first bread, dried milk or some other cooked stuff, she begins to use those artificial substances to perform the most ruthless and inhumane experiments on her child.

The basic error of medical science lies in its deplorable short-sightedness. Even such an eminent cytologist as Cowdry considers living and perfect foodstuffs like wheat, seeds and fruit to be "rather uniform and simple diets of local origin". In contrast, he regards the coloured heaps of ashes that are consumed by man as "a large variety of foods gathered from many quarters of the world" (op. cit. p. 220), and expects an Aristotle to come and show him the real difference between the two.

While strongly challenging the present system of therapeutics, I do not bear hatred against anybody. I merely entertain a deep feeling of pity for all men and women without exception, because they have been committing those crimes against their own persons,

against their relations and against mankind unwittingly and without reflection. But those who persist in their errors after reading these lines will be condemned by every intelligent human being.

The time has now come when biologists must choose one of the two paths open to them. Either they must accept the infallibility wisdom of nature and free humanity from all its sufferings at once or, ignoring the laws of nature and relying solely upon their own judgment, they must regard white bread as superior to the living wheat, deem the artificial to be preferable to the natural, and persist in their harmful experiments as before. What will the result be then? Let us suppose that the present state of affairs continued for a few more generations, during which time the quantity of drugs actually doubled; the number of artificial vitamins increased fourfold, every house was converted into a hospital and every individual became a doctor. What should we gain from all this, when doctors themselves succumb to illnesses more often than any other class of people and generally die before everybody else?

The whole responsibility for misguiding the world rests upon the leading specialists: the research biologists and the professors of medicine. Ordinary doctors are not to be blamed, because they merely put into practice what they have been taught by their teachers. No engineer is ever entrusted with the maintenance of a factory before he has been acquainted with all the details of its operation. Surely it is not possible to fill a group of people with some elementary scraps of knowledge, fanciful conjectures, hypothetical assumptions and contradictory theories, and then grant them complete freedom to play with the lives of their



fellow men by means of thousands of poisons, torturous instruments and capricious orders, and all this without any let or hindrance. Let us suppose for a moment that all the medical books and encyclopedias in the world are correct. Then; in order to memorize them a doctor would need a dozen lives and even then he would not be able to understand a thousandth part of the innumerable processes operating in the human organism.

If a patient with a chronic disease were to consult a hundred doctors, he would receive a hundred different prescriptions and recommendations. For doctors merely make experiments and most culpable experiments at that. As Those who now turn a deaf ear to these manifest truths, will not be able to shake responsibility off their shoulders tomorrow. When the children of today grow up in time and find themselves in poor health and steeped in addictions, they will call to account all the biologists, the leaders of the world and their own parents, and will demand to know what steps they took when they read these warnings. Did they still think that their wisdom was greater than the nature?

If they do not think so, they must put an immediate stop to the destruction of natural foodstuffs. This is the firm command of Nature, which does not admit any compromise. It is the law of the whole universes.

But today, mankind lives under the complete sway of devils that have transformed this earth into a hell. Those devils, having donned the masks of beautiful damsels, have seated themselves on the dinner tables and in the dishes of man; they have couched on his face and on his chin, on his arms and on his legs, on his neck

and on his shoulders, and from their places of vantage they impudently laugh at his senses. They have penetrated into his body and have lodged themselves in his very heart and soul.

The "civilized" man of today ridicules the idolatry of bygone ages, but he does not realize that he is a far worse idolater than the idolaters of the past. In former times, people set up images of various animals and adored them; today they slaughter those animals and worship their putrefied carcasses.

The "civilized" man of today cannot picture the savagery in which the whole world lives at the present time. The "delicate" and "tenderhearted" lady, who actually faints at the sight of a few drops of blood on the face of a child, calmly places on the table the bloody heart, liver or breast of a lamb and cuts it into pieces in all indifference, without reflecting for a moment that only an hour before the poor creature was full of life and vitality. Had she seen, from her childhood, the slaughter of a baby along with that of a chicken or a lamb, she would take up the knife with equal indifference and, without any qualms, together with the heart of the lamb, she would cut up the heart of that baby, cook and eat. The only difference lies in the fact that her eyes have become accustomed to the one, but not to the other, or else she would not have been surprised at the bloody sight of human bodies hanging in the butchers' shops, beside the carcasses of cows and sheep.

**Mankind at Present is Far From Being Civilized**

So long as human beings persist in consuming cooked food, there can be neither real thrive nor lasting peace on Earth. It is cooked eating that breeds all the wars and massacres in the world.

It is cooked eating that gives birth to evil leaders and dangerous dictators such as Hitler, Lenin, Stalin and etc. or such brutal criminals as Abdul Hamid and Talaat and their followers, who massacred one half of the peaceful population of Armenia and drove the other half out of their ancient homeland, where they had lived for thousands of years, robbing and pillaging their farming tools, their homes and their gardens, their mountains and their valleys, and then shamelessly parading before the eyes of the whole "civilized" world with complete impunity.

In spite of the continuous increase in the production of corn, there is still a great shortage of cereals all over the world.

There are three reasons for this strange paradox: First of all, by turning whole meal bread into white bread everywhere, we deprive it of its last remnants of nutritional value. Then, by the help of artificial fertilization we raise the quantity of the produce at the expense of its quality. Finally, the false man has been growing so rapidly that the increase in food production has been quite unable to keep pace with the demand.

And most of the croplands are being used to feed the livestock animals of the meat and dairy industries.

At first sight, people may find it difficult to picture the enormous benefits that humanity will derive from raw-eating.

Almost instantaneously every disease will be swept away forever, and every addition and crime will disappear from the face of the earth.

At the same time the expectation of life will increase two or three times and there will be an economic advance of such magnitude as will not be within human reach for hundreds of years, should the present state of affairs continue.

These assertions are facts and not fiction, and, what is more, all those benefits can be procured in a very simple way. All we have to do is to respect the most elementary laws of nature and to prevent the destruction of the living and integral wheat. If one had the mental perspicacity to penetrate and perceive the difference between the living, active wheat and the incinerated bread, one could easily deduce the difference between the organism of a raw-eater and that of a cooked-eater.

Let us now look at the attitude adopted by the present rulers of the world and by other responsible authorities towards these vital problems. The letters received from them show that they have read my first book with interest and that they find themselves in general sympathy with my views. I have not heard a single discordant voice from any quarter. But this is not enough. My book is not an interesting novel to be read once and placed aside. It is a volume in which the most momentous and urgent problems of our world are

discussed. It ought to be perused again and again, and every sentence of it ought to be carefully weighed and considered for hours.

It would be a mistake if those rulers of the world treat raw-eating as just one more routine question and, like all their other political and economic problems, submit it to "experts" for further study and consideration. For thousands of years there have been numerous experiments and studies, but they have all failed miserably. Today, it is the immediate duty of the authorities to direct people TO PUT AN END TO THOSE DESTRUCTIVE EXPERIMENTS AND TO RETURN TO THEIR NORMAL WAY OF LIFE. Today, every sensible person is an expert in determining the difference between the natural and the unnatural, the living nourishment and the lifeless meals with their artificial, debased materials.

The person who rules over millions of people, can't quite easily rule over a single individual, his own person.

There can be only two reasons for rejecting the principles of raw-eating: want of common sense and absence of will power. There can be no third reason. All other "reasons" are mere pretexts that are advanced to cover up those two shortcomings. Self-respecting people in responsible positions should not give anyone the impression that they lack courage and moral rectitude.

Those who have been practicing complete raw-eating for two or three months would never agree to return to their abnormal previously way of life, even if they were

led to the foot of the scaffold. The man who cares for his person and values the health and well-being of his children will make that "experiment" of two or three months without a moment's hesitation. Those leaders who are interested in the happiness and welfare of their people (if there is any) must pave the way for the prosperity of all mankind by their own personal examples. This will be their most useful and meritorious service to humanity.

It is no exaggeration to say that cooked foods, being unnatural and artificial substances, do not provide a grain of nourishment for our specialized cells. Moreover, the expense and trouble undertaken to provide them are not only wasteful dissipations, but they are the means for the complete destruction of the organs of man and, indeed, of man himself. The experience gained in the first few months of raw-eating will clearly show everybody the truth of these statements. It is worth pondering over this question for a while.

During the last few years a considerable amount of information has been received from all the corners of the earth on the successes achieved by raw-eating. This information shows that there are thousands of convinced raw-eaters dispersed throughout the world, many of whom have been cured of serious diseases and are now leading the happiest of lives. These people are neither experts nor scientists; they are merely educated and cultured people who have been able to comprehend the principles of raw-eating by their own insight and judgment, and have had the courage to make the necessary decision.

Unfortunately, the spread of my publications has met with a number of serious difficulties. Obviously, it is beyond the powers of a single individual to distribute millions of free books throughout the world. I made applications to several publishers in England and America, inviting them to republish my first English book in their countries. They all admitted that the book was both interesting and useful, but expressed their regrets that it did not fall within the scope of their publications. This was quite understandable, because its publication would have signaled the end of all their other "dietetic" books, for nobody acquainted with the principles of raw-eating would have paid the slightest attention to them. The people of today cannot see beyond their own abject interests.

I hereby appeal to all societies, philanthropic organizations, kindhearted benefactors and public-spirited humanitarians throughout the world for their kind assistance. Let them give me all the help they can in the dissemination of my publications. They can order twenty, fifty or a hundred copies of my books and distribute them at their own discretion, either by selling them or by giving them away free. Every book can save lives, cure people of a serious diseases or open out the prospect of a happy future for children. At the present time there is no activity of greater humanitarian value than that.

If I had had the benefit of such a book 15 years ago, today my two dear children would be alive. On the other hand, if my mind had not been enlightened some 10 years ago, I myself should not be living now. All the people of the world are in the same condition at this very moment and they sorely need our help. It is

necessary to acquaint them with the correct principles of nutrition as soon as possible.

Today, I see with my own eyes how certain some bodies spend enormous sums of money in order to distribute refined flour, sugar, dried milk and preserved meat to the poor. By distributing such unnatural and extremely degenerated foodstuffs to people, they unwittingly commit a most grievous sin and violate the laws of the nature. They would be performing the most pious act, if they opened the eyes of those unfortunate people and taught them how to be raw-vegan.

To all food addicts, black is white and white is black. There was a time when it used to be thought that the Earth was stationary, while the sun and the stars went round it. If anybody expressed a contrary belief, he was taken for a madman by short-sighted people, because to their own eyes the Earth was firmly fixed in its place, while the sun moved across the sky.

Precisely the same mentality prevails today. Man apparently feels on his own body that the cucumber "harms" him, whereas the doubly-cooked white bread and polished rice, being easily digested, "regulate" the functions of the stomach. But he does not realize that, in point of fact, it is the use of those very bread and rice that is the real cause of the weakness of his stomach; actually cucumber is the foodstuff that will cure him in the long run.

Today, all mankind are convinced that as soon as a person eats a few plates of "nutritious" food when he is hungry, he satisfies the regular requirements of his organism. But people are not aware that the normal



cells of that person do not take a grain of nourishment from those dead and artificial substances, and that, notwithstanding the fullness of the stomach, they remain quite hungry.

Today, all mankind are convinced that in order to lead a healthy life one must be guided by the various scientific calculations of the nutritive values of proteins, vitamins and minerals, obtained in research laboratories. They do not perceive that most calculations are in fact completely false and harmful representations of the true picture.

Today, when somebody becomes ill, he is convinced that all he has to do in order to cure himself is to find a particular poison called a drug. That is why he immediately begins to search for that wonder-working substance. But he does not know that drug therapy is the sorcery of this cooked-eating age and that no poison will ever be able to perform any useful function. Nor does he know that all diseases are due to two causes only: the continuous starvation of the normal cells for want of natural nutriment, and the pernicious effects of unnatural, cooked foodstuffs and other poisonous substances; there is no third cause. There is, therefore, only one sensible way of freeing ourselves from all diseases once for all. We must totally abstain from unnatural foodstuffs and drugs, and satisfy the needs of our cells by natural nutrition (raw veganism) alone.

Drugs, which are commonly regarded as means of curing diseases, are, in reality, themselves the causes of diseases. Generally speaking, it is an awful and tragic mistake to search for any curative properties in a synthetic substance or in an individual nutriment. Yet it

is this very mistake that has been made by mankind for centuries past. There do not exist any curative substances in this world; there exist only the special factors that cause diseases, by the removal of which all diseases will be automatically eradicated. Those factors are cooked food and the poisons which are misnamed medicines.

The man of today is very proud of his civilization, but he is far from being really civilized. Real civilization should be measured not by mere technical progress, but BY THE ENNOBLEMENT OF THE MIND AND SOUL OF THE INDIVIDUAL, THE CONQUEST OF VICES AND ADDICTIONS, AND THE EMANCIPATION OF THE HUMAN INTELLECT FROM SUPERSTITIONS. In order to gratify his abnormal desire for food, the man of today burns 80 percent of pure, natural foodstuffs on the fire and brings about his own destruction by creating diseases artificially. In order to satisfy their personal selfishness and pride, the rulers of nations sow the seeds of hatred and enmity amongst the peoples of the world and massacre each other. Even the representatives of science, dismissing all feelings of mercy and humanity, unscrupulously exploit the sacred name of science to further their own niggardly interests and in doing so they plunder people in the most ruthless manner.

One of the most striking proofs of the ignorance and backwardness of the "civilized" man of today is his approach to the question of cancer. For scores of years, he has been searching for the cause and treatment of such a serious calamity in certain specific chemical substances, and he is still continuing that senseless quest.

In this connection, I presented my irrefutable proofs to many authorities of the world four years ago. Today, I submit those proofs again, in a more detailed and amplified form, illustrated by many concrete examples. Why do the various ministries of health and other responsible authorities stand so aloof and indifferent? Why do people continue the frightful destruction of natural foodstuffs? Why do they keep on filling their books, newspapers and journals with contradictory and harmful recommendations of false vitamins and specific diets? Where is the conscience and benevolence of man? Where is the so- called civilization?

Let those who continually discourse upon civilization prove that they themselves are civilized enough to comprehend the most elementary laws of nature and understand what it meant to free mankind from all diseases, to double the expectation of life, to triple or quadruple the standard of living.

In this connection, an unfortunate example of the most flagrant misappropriation of the rights of other came from distant Los Angeles two years ago. After reading my first English book, a lady in California, Mrs. H. Bulbeck, adopts a complete raw- eating diet. Attracted by the humanitarian aspect of the idea, she orders 30 copies of the book and decides to spread the good message amongst her friends and relations. In the meantime, having learned that a person named John Martin Reinecke writes articles on the "useful" properties of raw food in the "Let's Live" Magazine in Los Angeles, she addresses him a letter and gives him an account of her method of treatment and the subsequent recovery of both her and her husband from every illness that they had.

After reading my books, many patients all over the world have adopted raw-eating and as a result they have been cured of a host of serious illnesses, ranging from simple headaches and stomach disorders to cardiovascular disease and cancer. Patients, who for years on end had not derived any benefit from advice of the most highly-qualified "specialists", and many of whom had been discharged from hospitals as hopeless cases, have regained their health within a few months and are now able to enjoy all the blessings of an active life.

The person who abandons cooked food and other poisonous substances is immune from all diseases and can confidently look forward to a green old age of health and vigor, free from the constant curse of illnesses. In the next part of this book, the reader will find a selection of the numerous letters that I receive daily from former patients anxious to help others by narrating their experiences. It is in this spirit that Mrs. Bulbeck decided to write to Mr. Reinecke.

That gentleman ignores my right on my own book, copies out word for word every one of the six maxims given on the cover of my book! inserts them in the February and April, 1965 issues of the "Let's Live" Magazine as part of an article entitled "Adventures in Raw Foods", then he offers to sell additional information at the price of \$5. But what is most curious of all is the fact that in an introductory note the editors of the magazine confirm that those contents belong to the writer of the article! People should not read such a publication as the "Let's Live" Magazine, which survives on advertisements of artificial vitamins and "dietetic" preparations.

Now for over a decade, I have forsaken social life and have deprived myself of every pleasure. I have been extremely frugal in regard to the needs of my family and myself, but I have not hesitated for a moment to spend all my savings in carrying out studies and publishing books, 10,000 copies of which I have already distributed free to, scientific organizations and individuals in all the corners of the earth. I have made these sacrifices in order to show the whole world the true way to a happy and natural life, and all along I have protested with my heart and soul against selling such advice for money.

But today Mr. J. M. Reinecke, making a lucrative use of my ideas and my maxims, demands a fee of \$5 dollars to show people how to eat natural foodstuffs! This is, indeed, the most disturbing aspect of the question.

*Here are extracts from the two articles of Mr. Reinecke:*

## **LET'S LIVE**

*February, 1965:*

ADVENTURES IN RAW FOODS BY JOHN MARTIN  
REINECKE

American Fruit Originator and Explorer

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED BY THE AUTHOR

- In the present series of articles the author gives his opinions based on personal experimentations, plus his many experiences while living among and

studying peoples of many climates — their diets of raw foods and health-giving fruits. — Ed.

Raw food should be the only nourishment taken by man. The eating of cooked food is an unnatural habit which must be eliminated from this world if perfect health is to be attained. Human nourishment should consist of living cells only, because cooked food is the main cause of all human illnesses. Eating raw food frees mankind from all illnesses and extends the span of human life to 140 years or more.

It is the worst of crimes to accustom the newborn child to cooked food, because this is when all his troubles begin (See the cover of my "Raw-Eating" first edition). Biologists must prove that nature has made a mistake in not presenting us with foodstuffs in a cooked state. (First edition, p. 32). A normal baby detests the taste of cooked foods, which appear appetizing only to the cooked food addict, just as opium seems pleasing to the drug addict. (First edition, p. 33). The kitchen fire burns and destroys 90 percent of the value of good raw food. (Cover of my first edition).

*April, 1965:*

At first sight it seems impossible that we could free ourselves of almost any illnesses merely by eating natural raw food. But the fact is that the "unbelievable" easily becomes an accomplished reality... (First edition, p. 45).

It should be the duty of biologists and doctors to encourage people to eat natural things; not to separate the nutritive constituents from foods, but always to eat

them as nearly whole as possible in their naturally balanced proportions and in their living, raw state. Doctors and biologists should never talk about the usefulness of separated individual nutritive constituents, but should emphasize the indispensability of complete raw foods.

## BRIEF SUMMARY

Generally speaking, the whole science of nutrition may be summarized in two main points and made the concern of all mankind:

1. Human nourishment should consist entirely of living raw cells. Only those foodstuffs that consist of living cells have all the qualities necessary to satisfy the demands of the human organism.

2. There are both common and choice vegetable bodies in nature. The most perfect and highly nourishing vegetable bodies are the better varieties of fruits, green vegetables, nuts, cereals and roots.

In short, man enjoys perfect health when he feeds solely on raw food; he is ill to the extent that he consumes cooked food; and he dies when he subsists exclusively on such a diet. (First edition, p. 24).

Closing note by the Editor of the Magazine:

Due to the pressure of duties it will not be possible for Mr. Reinecke to answer letters. Upon receipt of \$5 he will send you his own daily raw food menu-guide and recipes for the United States and Tropics with complete directions. These are not in book form. Send to... - Ed.

Time and again we have emphasized the fact that all fruits, vegetables and nuts are perfect foodstuffs of the highest quality, with almost identical nutritive properties. Hence, all "menu-guides" and recipes for raw nourishment are devoid of any scientific or nutritional value. Even the most ignorant person can devise his own dietary programme, guided by the dictates of his appetite and his sense of taste.

*Upon receiving the February issue of the Magazine, I wrote a letter to the Editor, Mr. Kay K. Thomas, believing that he would be glad to protect my rights in the future:*

*April 21, 1965:*

**Mr. Kay K. Thomas, 1133 N. Vermont Ave., Los Angeles, Calif.**

Dear Sir,

It was with surprise that I read in the February number of "Let's Live" an article by Mr. John Martin Reinecke entitled "Adventures in Raw Foods", where the writer has copied out word for word the mottoes on the cover of my book, "Raw-Eating", and has represented them as his own content. Please correct this misunderstanding in your next issue and kindly take steps to prevent a similar occurrence in the future.

***Arshavir Ter Hovannessian***

*Unfortunately, about a month later, I received the following unsatisfactory reply, in which every effort was made to whitewash Mr. Reinecke's literary dishonesty:*



*May 12, 1965:*

***Arshavir Ter-Hovannessian Kakh Avenue 21,  
Peshan Street, Tehran, Iran.***

Dear Sir:

Regarding your letter of April 21 we wrote to Mr. John Martin Reinecke for an explanation and this is what he has advised us;

`I have checked over the February installment of my article and find that in no place have I copied word for word any part of Mr. Ter Hovannessian's mottoes. All of my statements on raw foods are my own thoughts and words gathered from 25 years of accumulated experience and study. If I have made any statements similar to his, then it is purely coincidental and not intentional.

`I suppose I have one of the most complete collections of raw food books in the country, and among them I find a copy of his little booklet. If I had copied from it, I would have given him credit. I remember that his booklet was given to me by a friend about a year ago; and that I sent to Mr. Ter-Hovannessian \$10 for him to send me some more booklets for my friends. That was about a month ago. To date I have not heard from Mr. Ter Hovannessian nor the money. If he does not want to send me his booklets, then he should return my money, because I mean only courtesy and the good of spreading the benefits of raw foods that saved my life 25 years ago.'

(signed) John Martin Reinecke "Under the circumstances and in view of Mr. Reinecke's statements that he did not appropriate the mottoes on the cover of your book, "Raw-Eating", we have made no correction in LET'S LIVE Magazine.

**(signed) KAY THOMAS, Editor-Publisher.**

In reply to these rather flimsy arguments I sent the following letter:

*May 27, 1965:*

**Mr. Kay Thomas, Editor-Publisher. Dear Sir:**

I am sorry to inform you that I do not regard your reply of May 12 to my letter of April 21 as satisfactory.

I hold your magazine responsible for Mr. Reinecke's misappropriation of my thoughts and mottoes and reserve the right to demand satisfaction.

You try to justify the public deceit practiced by Mr. Reinecke, who continues to sell my thoughts at five dollars a piece. My campaign is chiefly aimed at such extortions.

As regards the \$10.00, which Mr. Reinecke claims he has sent to me with an order for books, I am sorry to say that I have received neither money nor letter from him.

***ATERHOV***

This correspondence had ended when Mrs. Bulbeck was kind enough that sent me the April number of the "Let's Live" Magazine, in which, as it was shown above, there are even more glaring examples of literary dishonesty. I leave it to the reader to decide whether the "similarities" between my writing and Mr. Reinecke's articles are coincidental or deliberate.

The editor cannot shake responsibility off his shoulders, because he was fully acquainted with my book, which had already been reviewed in his magazine several months previously, while Mr. Reinecke only makes matters worse by baseless excuses and calumnies. As to the rather irrelevant question of the ten dollars that he claims to have sent to me, I publicly demand to know the name of the bank or the means by which he has allegedly remitted me the money, about which I have no information whatever.

All recommendations of specific diets should be completely wiped away from the face of the earth. Mankind should clearly realize that COOKED FOOD DOES NOT PROVIDE ANY NOURISHMENT WHATSOEVER and that MAN IS NOT CARNIVOROUS. Beyond this, LET EACH PERSON EATS WHATEVER HE LIKES AND IN ANY FORM HE WISHES. This is entirely a matter of individual taste.

Our "dieticians" have so confused the brains of people with long lists of recipes and menus, that many people think I, too, belong to that brotherhood of "experts", and therefore they often write to me to ask for a program of consuming natural food. Here I wish to take the opportunity to give a collective answer to them all.

Henceforth, there should no longer be any special dietetic program, recommendations or schedules for anybody. The human being should eat whatever he fancies, whenever he can and as much as his appetite demands, just as all other living beings do, from an ant to an elephant. Other animals, however, usually have to be satisfied with such materials as are readily available to them; Compare clover, hay, mountain bushes, tree leaves and desert thorns with grains, nuts, vegetables and fruits.

The raw-eater may eat once a day or ten times a day; he may feed on one kind of fruit or a hundred kinds. From the point of view of health it makes no difference, because each individual raw vegetable foodstuff taken separately provides complete nourishment in itself. The raw-eater must be guided not by lists of "scientific" or "dietetic" recommendations, but by the demands of his appetite and palate, which will always be his unerring guides in the selection of natural nutriments. The surest, the safest and the easiest way is to consume our food in the state in which nature has prepared and presented it to us, by simply crushing it under our teeth. But if anybody has the time and leisure to prepare salads and other mixed dishes, he must eat them immediately after preparation, otherwise in course of time man will be driven towards new degenerations of foodstuffs.

People should no longer read books that deal with the etiology of individual diseases, diagnosis, therapeutics, drugs, vitamins, minerals, proteins, hydrotherapy, electrotherapy and other similar subjects, because all diseases originate from one common cause and have one common method of cure.

Many vegetarians, and even non-vegetarians, who try to consume a little more fruit than usual have the presumption to regard themselves as raw-eaters. No one, however, can consider himself a raw-eater if he takes even one cooked meal a month, because in that way he will never be able to free himself entirely from disease. This is because in the initial stages of raw-eating a certain number of diseased cells may fall into a state of dormancy and prolong their existence in that condition for quite a long time. Only one cooked meal a month may then be enough to resuscitate them and afford them the opportunity to multiply again. As soon as a raw-eater takes a morsel of cooked food, he assuredly provides those diseased cells with fresh nourishment and gives them a new lease of life. Consequently, when somebody is not able to free himself completely from the scourge of diseases, he must look for the cause in those occasional transgressions and in no other quarter. There can be no justification at all for those defaults.

One of the most baseless arguments against complete raw-eating, which sometimes reaches me from certain northern countries and especially from England, is the disparity of climatic conditions. So long as man is able to find a handful of raw grain, there can be no question of a shortage of natural nutriment in any country whatsoever. Besides, in view of the fact that cooked food does not provide the least nourishment to the human organism, there must be sufficient foodstuffs in all the regions of the world if people manages to nourish themselves and sustain life. By eliminating cooked meals from our diet, we do not detract anything from the nutritive value of our nourishment; on the contrary, we free ourselves from

poisonous and harmful materials. The full meaning of these truths can be appreciated only by the person who has enjoyed the benefits of raw-eating for a number of years. All those "scientific" postulates by which biologists try to represent cooked food as nourishment are baseless conjectures and vain delusions.

As matters stand, at this very moment there are certain countries where people are suffering from a "shortage" of foodstuffs and are under the constant threat of starvation, when an official declaration is all that is needed to accomplish the long-awaited miracle of bringing abundance into the world. Unfortunately, this simple and plain declaration that COOKING DEBASES NATURAL FOODSTUFFS AND CONVERTS THEM INTO HARMFUL SUBSTANCES does not appear anywhere, in spite of the fact that already in 1963, I brought this incontrovertible truth to the attention of all the leading authorities and scientific circles of the world. This is a striking indication of how deeply immersed in humanity today in ignorance, prejudice, superstitions and loathsome addictions. Words like civilization and progress ring hollow when they are applied to people who notwithstanding all that has been said and written, still refuse to admit that cooking is an unnatural and pernicious operation.

They say that biologists have made stupendous advances in their knowledge. It seems to me that the more they advance, the more must they realize that they know nothing. And when they reach the stage where they freely concede that against the true wisdom of nature their own knowledge is no more than a smattering, it may indeed be admitted that they really learned something.

It is not among those biologists "steeped in contemporary knowledge and learning" that we come across venerable patriarchs who have lived to be 140 or 150 years of age. We meet such people at a fair distance away from the great centers of learning, in the bosom of nature, where they are partially immune from the harms caused by drugs and excessively degenerated foodstuffs. How much longer and healthier their lives would be, if they were spared even that partial degeneration to which their food is subjected at present. What gives me the right and the courage to challenge almost every current conception of medical science is the fact that 100 PERCENT RAW EATING PUTS AN IMMEDIATE END TO ALL DISEASES RADICALLY AND SIMULTANEOUSLY. Test, and you shall be convinced.

I am making no exaggeration when I regard as murderers and criminals all those people who, by some fanciful pretext or other, forbid the sick and the invalid their NATURAL NUTRIMENTS — fresh vegetables and fruits — which are THE ONLY EFFECTIVE MEANS of restoring their lost health. Through their deplorable ignorance those "learned scientists" perpetrate greater massacres than Attila or Hitler ever did. By their foolish recommendations they kill millions of people, day in and day out, without any relief or respite. Among similar unconscious criminals are all the manufacturers and distributors of medicines, beverages, tobacco, refined flour, bread, meat, confectionery, sugar, tea, coffee and a host of other injurious products like these. Every factory producing such unnatural, degenerated substances does more harm to humanity than atomic bombs.

I appeal to all humanitarians to do what they can to help me propagate these truths both by the spoken word and through my publications.

Those raw-eaters who have been cured of their diseases are under a special obligation to place the details of their recovery at the disposal of the press and of all responsible authorities.

Finally, it is the bounden duty of journalists to publish a summary of those statements in the columns of their newspaper, and demand to know why the authorities persist in their lethargic inactivity.

## **PART THREE**

### **The Achievements of RAW-EATING**

Many readers write me letters to ask me about the successes achieved by raw-eating. In order to satisfy their curiosity I am glad to give them some relevant information.

A year after the publication of the first volume of my Armenian work in 1960, I published a shorter book in Persian, of which I distributed 4,000 free copies among various institutions, authorities and the press. The newspapers and periodicals of Tehran gave the book a favourable reception and many of them wrote lengthy reviews in that connection.

The book received considerable attention in Court circles. The husband of Her Highness Princess Shams



Pahlavi, Mr. Mehrdad Pahlbod, now Minister of Culture, invited me to his residence and informed me that my book had been honoured by the attention of the *Shah* (Shahanshah Aryamehr, king MohamadReza Pahlavi), who had instructed him to make further inquiries about the subject. I am pleased to record that I had six or seven subsequent consultations with Mr. Pahlbod. The Secretary General of the Red Lion and Sun Society, Dr. Abbas Naficy, and the Director of Khajenouri Maternity Hospital, Dr. AbulGhasem Naficy, and several other leading specialists lauded my views and promised me their cooperation.

Instructions were issued to bring up a number of children in one of the orphanages by raw- eating. In addition, the principles of raw-eating were to be adopted in the treatment of patients in one of the children's hospitals and in reforming the nutritional system of one of the day nurseries. Unfortunately, in actual practice I met with various obstacles. I soon came face to face with a large army of prejudiced doctors and officials, whom I had to imbue with the new ideas. This was by no means an easy task. The whole affair was procrastinated to such an extent that I became tired and abandoned the attempt with profound regret.

This failure was all the more deplorable, because I observed at close quarters how, as a result of unnatural nutrition, the infants in the nurseries had remained weak and sickly, while in the hospitals they relied on artificial vitamins, poisonous drugs and animal proteins to rescue from the clutches of death those frail, skinny children who, deprived of mother's milk and natural nutriments, had dried milk and white bread as their

mainstay. Needless to add, not a thought was given to the necessity of natural, faultless nutrition.

But those contacts, as well as my presence in several medical conferences, taught me a great many important lessons. First and foremost, I realized that although the viewpoints put forward by me are the most elementary and simple laws of nature, they are digested and assimilated only by people whose high educational attainments are matched by freedom of judgment and independence of mind. A person of mediocre intellect cannot envisage the possibility that a layperson may be able to revolutionize the whole medical science of today and to confute the dietetic conceptions current in the scientific world.

That was why I decided to publish a concise volume in English and submit it to the attention of the highest scientific and political circles. Overcoming very great difficulties, I worked 16 hours a day to write the book, after which I had it translated into English and published it in 1963. Then I extracted 3,000 addresses from various books of reference and sent about 4,000 complimentary copies of the book to all the rulers of the world, and to universities, scientific centers, international organizations, and leading newspapers and periodical magazines. I actually signed most of the books and attached an accompanying letter to each. I considered this the quickest and the most appropriate way of propagating my ideas throughout the length and breadth of the world.

The results surpassed my most sanguine expectations. Thousands of letters and newspapers received by me during the next few months left me in no

doubt that my book was being read with interest by all the leading figures and authorities in the world, many of whom unhesitatingly confirmed the truth of my ideas.

During recent years, I have not only forgone my social activities, but I have also completely abandoned my personal business in order to devote myself to my books day and night. Yet, strange to say, there are people who think I have taken leave of my senses, just because, instead of amassing wealth and whiling away my time eating, drinking and merry-making, I spend all my savings on the publication of certain books, which I distribute to all free of cost.

But in my view, there is no pleasure in life greater than the satisfaction derived from unselfish service to our fellowman. People construct palatial buildings and are delighted by their sight. Now, each of the numerous letters of congratulation, appreciation and thanks that I receive every day from all the corners of the world has the full value of a building for me. And when the letter is from one who has been cured from a serious illness by my advice and who regards me as his savior, there is no bound or limit to my happiness, which is enhanced all the more by the feeling that all this has been done without any remuneration whatsoever.

My soul is tormented day and night when I see people perish everywhere as a result of so-called unexpected deaths. I clearly perceive that those people DO NOT DIE; they foolishly KILL THEMSELVES for the sake of a plateful of unnatural and artificial food. My heart bleeds when I see a terrified mother snatching away from her innocent child the noblest of fruits and

thrusting into his hand the deadly bread, milk and meat instead.

In my first English book, I had briefly touched upon almost all relevant problems. In this volume, I have amplified some of my previous statements and have spoken about several important questions at somewhat greater length, making the subject more comprehensible to the general public. Before bringing the book to a conclusion, however, I should like to acquaint the reader with the reception accorded to my first English book, as well as to my other publications.

**Copy of my letter addressed to the rulers and other leading authorities of the world:**

Please honor me by accepting a complimentary copy of my book entitled "Raw-Eating". I sincerely hope that you will find it possible to devote a few of your precious hours to the perusal of the book.

By regarding cooked food as normal human nutrition, mankind as a whole has blindly taken the fatal road to annihilation.

The adoption of the ideas and proposals expounded in the book will be of the greatest benefit to the welfare of your nation.

*A few copies and extracts from the replies received:*

*Letter from His Excellency Mr. Amir Abbas Hoveyda, the Prime Minister of Iran:*

*Tehran, 18th October, 1965*

**Mr. A. T. Hovanessian,**

"I have received your letter and the book that you had sent with it. While regretting the fact that owing to excessive pressure of work until recently I was not able to find the leisure to read your book, I thank you very much for presenting it to me."

***(Signed) AMIR ABBAS HOVEYDA, Prime Minister.***

\*\*\*

***USA Embassy, June 29, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov:

Your letter of March 28, 1964, addressed to President Johnson has been received at the White House, as well as the enclosed copy of your book, 'RAW-EATING'.

The Embassy has been instructed to convey to you the President's appreciation for your thoughtfulness in providing him an opportunity to see your book.

***WALTER G. RAMSAY,***

***Staff Aide to the Ambassador, Tehran.***

\*\*\*

***Windsor Castle, 27th April, 1964***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

I am commanded by The Queen to thank you for your letter to The Prince of Wales, and for the copy of the book that you have written.

Her Majesty thought it so very good of you to send this book to her son, and I am to send you The Queen's sincere thanks.

***MARY MORRISON, Windsor Castle, Lady-in-Waiting, England.***

\*\*\*

*Paris, 29 AVR. 1964*

Monsieur,

Le General de Gaulle a bien regu la plaquette que vous lui avez aimablement adressee.

Monsieur le President de la Republique m'a chargé de vous remercier de l'intention qui a inspire cet anvoi.

***(Signature) Secretaire Particulier.***

\*\*\*

***Moscow, June 21, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

I acknowledge with thanks the receipt of your book 'RAW FOOD IS THE PRINCIPLE OF NUTRITION', which I am perusing with interest.

***S. KURASHOV, Minister of Public Health, USSR.***

\*\*\*

***Phnom-Penh, le 9 Janvier, 1965***

Monsieur,

Je vous remercie sincerement de votre envoi de l'ouvrage 'RAW-EATING' dont vous etes l'auteur et vous felicite pour les recherches et les experiences que vous poursuivez sur l'alimentation.

Avec tous mes encouragements je vous prie d'agreer, Monsieur, l'assurance de ma haute consideration.

***NORODOM SIHANOUK UPAYUVAREACH, Chef de l' Etat du Cambodge.***

\*\*\*

***Phnom-Penh, 11"" August, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

With great pleasure I have received your wonderful book entitled 'RAW-EATING'. The name of the book gives me a deep curiosity about its contents.

After going through the book I am convinced of all the truths that you wrote in the book...

The book is so precious to me. I keep it as an unforgettable souvenir from you.

Now, may I ask your permission to translate this book into the Cambodian language so that it gives the greatest benefit to my nation. I hope your new discovery of a new science will make a new turn to the survival of humanity as a whole.

***CHUON NATH JOTANNANO,***

*The Supreme Chief of the Monks in Cambodia.*

\*\*\*

***Phnom-Penh, le 25 Juillet, 1964.***

Monsieur,

En accusant reception de votre manuel 'RAW-EATING' que vous avez eu l'amabilite de me faire parvenir, j'ai l'honneur et le plaisir de vous informer que ce livre m'a beaucoup interesse et je vous en remercie vivement.

***NORODOM KANTOL,***

*Le President du Conseil des Ministres, Royaume du Cambodge.*

\*\*\*

***THE WHITE HOUSE, June 1, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,



Thank you for sending to me a copy of your recent book. I am looking

forward to a few free hours when I will have a chance to read it in some detail.

***RICHARD W. REUTER, Special Assistant to the President and Director, Food For Peace, U.S.A.***

\*\*\*

***Luxembourg, May 13, 1964.***

Dear Sir,

Their Royal Highnesses The Grand-Duchess and The Hereditary, Grand-Duke of Luxembourg, desire me to acknowledge receipt of your kind letter of 23rd March 1964, by which you sent Them your book 'Raw-Eating'.

Their Royal Highnesses were very touched by this kind attention and charge me to send you. Their very best thanks. They will read your book with great interest.

***Major Germain FRANTZ, Aide-de-Camp.***

\*\*\*

***Taiwan, August 18, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Hovannessian,

I have read with interest your letter of May 12th together with the enclosed volume on 'Raw- Eating'. It

is a very thought-provoking recommendation which you have made for mankind as a whole, and I think it deserves careful perusal by those who are concerned with the health of ourselves and the coming generations. Please accept my sincere thanks for your thoughtfulness in sending me this volume.

***CHEN CHENG, Prime Minister of the Republic of China.***

\*\*\*

***Teheran, le 18 Octobre, 1964.***

Cher Monsieur,

L'Ambassade de la RSF de Yougoslavie a l'honneur de vous informer d'avoir reçu une lettre du Secretariat General de la Presidence de la RSF de Yougoslavie par laquelle est confirmée la reception du livre RAW-EATING' dont vous avez eut l'amabilité d'envoyer au President Tito.

Le Secretariat General vous remercie cordialement, au nom du President Tito, pour votre aimable envoie.

***VLADIMIR MILOVANOVIC, Conseiller.***

\*\*\*

***Transport House, London, 29th April, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Hovannessian,

It was very kind of you to send me a complimentary copy of your book 'RAW-EATING', I shall take the first opportunity of studying the dietary principles you propound.

***A.L. WILLIAMS, General Secretary,***

***THE LABOUR PARTY***

\*\*\*

***Washington, May 15, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

Thank you for the copy of your book, 'Raw-Eating', which I recently received. Its contents have been noted, and I appreciate your thoughtfulness in sending it.

***JOHN M. BAILEY, Chairman, DEMOCRATIC NATIONAL COMMITTEE.***

\*\*\*

***Berne, 26th February, 1964.***

Sir,

We acknowledge the receipt of and wish to thank you for a copy of your booklet entitled:

Raw-Eating (a general survey). Everybody must recognize the integral raw materials of his body,' which we have read with interest. With our compliments,

***SWISS FEDERAL PUBLIC HEALTH SERVICE,***

*The Chief of Foodstuff Control, RUFFI.*

\*\*\*

***Port-au-Prince, le July 16, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

Thank you very much for your book entitled 'Raw-Eating'. This book shall be read from cover to cover because it has tackled a problem that will be to the benefit of my country at large.

I hope your recommendation in the book will meet the requirements of all and will be the best seller this year.

***DEPARTEMENT DE LA SANTE PUBLIQUE ET***

*DE LA POPULATION, GERARD PHILIPPEAUX,  
SECRETARY OF STATE,*

***Republique d'Haiiii.***

\*\*\*

***Berlin, June 4, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

The President of the German Democratic Republic, Walter Ulbricht, expresses his most sincere thanks for the booklet that you have sent to him.

As usual your statements may be criticized in detail — much of it surely being above all the concern of the specialist: the doctor, the nutritional scientist, etc. Nevertheless, we quite agree with you that every effort should be made to bring about a sound system of nutrition.

The Government of the German Democratic Republic, and especially the Ministry of Health, pay great attention to this question. In order to create a healthy mode of living, a committee has been formed here of late, one of whose objects is the popularization of the correct principles of nutrition.

***HUTH, Chief Adviser, Chancellery of State.***

\*\*\*

***La Habana, 24 de agosto de 1964.***

Estimado doctor:

Acuso recibo de su amable envío del libro 'Raw-Eating', gentileza que aprecio muy sinceramente y espero disfrutar de su lectura y recoger del mismo, las ideas y orientaciones valiosas que su experiencia en esta materia nos trasmite por intermedio de su lectura.

***Dr. JOSE R. MACHADO ' VENTURA, MINISTRO-DE SALUD PUBLICA, Cuba.***

\*\*\*

***La Paz (Bolivia), July 10, 1964.***

Thank you very much for the complimentary copy of your book on 'Raw Eating'. I have not yet read it through, and only gone over certain chapters. The ideas you express in them are stimulating although controversial. I am not yet in a position of commenting them, but I do want to inform you of the reception of your book and the interest it aroused in me.

***Dr. GUILLERMO JAUREGUI G. Minister of Public Health.***

\*\*\*

***Beograd, 20th April, 1964.***

This is to thank you for sending me the complimentary copy of your book entitled 'RAW-EATING', which will certainly rouse a great deal of interest among those who are concerned with the problems of adequate nutrition.

***MOMA MARKOVICH , Federal Secretary for Health and Social Policy.***

\*\*\*

Letters of encouragement and gratitude have also been received from the following personalities:

The Queen of the Netherlands; the King of Denmark; the King of Sweden; the King of Belgium; Antonio Segni, President of the Italy; Adolf Scharf, President of Austria; Fransico Orllch, President of Costa Rica; S. Radhakrishnan, President of India; de Lisle, Governor-General of Australia; Urho Kekkonen, President of

Finland; Eamon de Valera, President of Ireland; P. Van de Calseyde, M.D. Director of World Health Organization, Copenhagen, Denmark; Miss la Marsh, Minister of National Health and Welfare, Canada; CH. Shapirah, Minister of Interior, Israel; Alfonso Ponce Archila, Minister of Health, Guatemala; Abbebe Retta, Minister of Public Health, Ethiopia; Yuichi Saito, Chief Liaison Officer, Ministry of Health and Welfare, Tokyo-Japan; Shri Mohanlal Vyas, Minister of Health and Labour, Gujarat, India; MacEntee, Minister of Health, Ireland; Marga A. M. Klompe, Minister of Health, Netherlands; Giorgio Borg Olivier, Prime Minister of Malta; Gudrun Sanz and Elsie Waerndt, Nobel Foundation, Sweden; J. Grimond, Leader of the Liberal Party London; Pierre Werner, Prime Minister of Luxembourg; Sean F Lemass, Prime Minister of Ireland; Robert G. Menzies, Prime Minister of Australia; Mehdi Nawaz Jung, Governor of Gujarat, India; Maharaja Shri Jaya Chamaraja Wadiyar Bahador, Governor of Madras, India; S. K. Patil, Minister of Food and Agriculture, India; P. C. Sen, Chief Minister of West Bengal, India; William Gopallawa, Governor-General of Ceylon; Lester Pearson, Prime Minister of Canada; Sampurnanand, Governor of Rajasthan, India; Shri Partap Singh Kairon, Chief Minister of Punjab, India; Robert Fraser, Independent Television Authority, London: Mr. Sarnoff, President, National Broadcasting Company, New York, and so on...

“Letters have been sent to many countries but as you notice, some of the mails had been sent to politicians of weaker countries with more starvation and poverty and other problems due to their false, dangerous and anti-freedom policies, so if they change their way and help their people

then they can become a rich and peaceful developed nation. Raw Veganism is a key for them if they change their way."

*The following notice was published in the official organ of the Vegans Society, Great Britain (September 1964):*

"The tragic loss of his 10-year-old son and 14-year-old daughter by what he came to know as unnatural nutrition, made Arshavir Ter Hovannessian make a deep study of diet — the result is in 'RAW-EATING', a booklet (7/2d) we are glad to have received from Tehran.

In a convincing way he destroys nearly all our preconceived ideas about diet, and even vegans, with their cooked foods, may feel a bit shaken.

There is no nonsense about synthetic vitamins and perhaps in his forthright adherence to raw food he may have shown the way round the bogey of vitamin B12 and other 'essential' vitamins.

We cannot give his arguments, but in his daughter, six-year-old Anahit, who has never consumed a single morsel of cooked or degenerated food in her life, is striking proof of the efficacy of the diet he has evolved, and which we quote here..."

They then print, in its entirety, the appendix given at the end of the book, as well as Anahit's picture.

\*\*\*

***Wilmslow, 20th April, 1964:***



Thank you very much for your kindness in sending a copy of 'Raw-Eating'. I am sure the idea is basically sound and we know the immense remedial qualities of a raw food diet.

If you like to send me a photograph of your lovely daughter Anahit (as on the back cover), I shall be glad to publish it in THE BRITISH VEGETARIAN later this year together with appendix from your book.

***GEOFFREY L. RUDD, Secretary & Editor, THE VEGETARIAN SOCIETY***

*Geoffrey L. Rudd, Bank Square, Wilmslow, Cheshire, England.*

\*\*\*

***Malaga, May 28, 1965.***

Dear Friend,

Please send us at once a dozen copies of your excellent book on 'Raw-Eating'. We will send remittance promptly upon billing, at re-sale rates. We will be making a lecture tour of England & Wales this Autumn, and will hope to use the book to good advantage there.

***H. JAY DINSHAH, President, THE AMERICAN VEGAN SOCIETY, H.Jay Dinshah, Pres. Malaga, New Jersey, U.S.A***

\*\*\*

*The late Dr. Bircher-Benner's son, Dr. Ralph Bircher, inserted a six-page leading article in DER WENDEPUNKT, the organ of the Bircher-Benner Clinic in Zurich (May, 1964), under the title of "Alles-oder-nichts-Lehren fiber Ernährung" ( All or Nothing-Doctrine of Nutrition), which may be roughly summarized as follows:*

"In two different corners of the world, two completely opposing doctrines of nutrition have been put forward. In California, an experimenter named Wurnitz has concocted an almost tasteless nutritional powder from a mixture of 48 chemicals. With this artificial 'food' he conducts experiments on 18 convicts and, without waiting for the results, he readily unfolds the prospective to journalists all too prematurely." After speaking a little more about the absurdities of that so-called scientist, the reviewer continues; On the other hand, we have on our review table a small book with a totally opposite teaching on nutrition, representing an 'All-or Nothing' standpoint: Aterhov/Raw-Eating. The publication is endowed with solid reasoning, is written in excellent English and is a summary of two massive Armenian volumes. One perceives in it the presence of the son of the old high culture of Iran. With no small self-confidence... he represents pure vegetable nourishment as the most natural and the only correct food for the human being, and in our compromise-seeking age he does this with such fresh, downright superhuman absoluteness that in all probability it would pay to translate that little book into German."

*After recapitulating the essential points of my conceptions one by one, the writer mentions certain scientific facts that speak in my favor;*

"Already forty years ago Walter Sommer wondered why Bircher-Benner had not gone so far in his perception as to declare raw food the only nourishment for human. In favor of Aterhov is the fact that according to the latest investigations (Reader's Digest, January, 1964) man has actually lived on (almost pure) raw vegetable nourishment for a million and a half years and thereby, one may assume, he has attained his highest natural development. In favor of Aterhov are the striking realization of the present-day lack of balance between nutrients and vitamins, the 'stimulated hunger', the 'period of latency (Dammerungszone) in ill health', the role of 'terrain' in infectious diseases, the great economy in metabolism during fresh vegetable nutrition, the biological superiority of vegetable proteins, especially in raw food, the integrity of nutriments, which must never be upset, and the prospect of such nutrition in the face of world-wide shortage of foodstuffs."

*According to the reviewer, humans waves between those two extreme poles. In his opinion it would presumably be right "to never rest in the middle." And he advises the reader to stand much nearer to Aterhov than to Wirnitz.*

\*\*\*

***Ashington, Rochford, February 28, 1964.***

Dear Sir,

Thank you for sight of your book 'Raw-Eating'. If you know our list of publications you will realise that we agree heartily with your fundamental premise. We are

in complete sympathy with your point of view and inevitably, in the light of this Company's activities, agree with your findings.

We like your approach to the subject of food for children. It is very good indeed. It is so true that the young child has to have its natural taste for raw fruit deliberately diverted in favour of cooked foods. And we admire your comprehensive treatment of your subject, for within the space of 53 pages you have certainly brought to bear all the arguments in favour, whether from the point of view of healthful living, or of overcoming and/or preventing disease, and taking into account the medical and economic implications, even touching upon the ethical outcome for the world as a whole.

...Unfortunately would-be benefactors to humanity do not receive acclamation and other (material) rewards unless they work through 'the establishment.' Otherwise what could one not do with even a tenth of the hundreds of thousands of pounds that are donated for 'research' by scientists who very often only draw blanks after a time, even if the results have not actually done harm.

***THE C. W. DANIEL COMPANY LIMITED***  
***Ashingdon, Rochford, Essex, England.***

\*\*\*

***Mexico, D. F. April 23, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Hovannessian:

We have just received your book RAW-EATING' and only in a glimpse, I realize that it is quite interesting and that you are really doing a nice job trying to convince people that the best of all is to follow the nature without the absurd modifications that mankind has done with it.

***Ing. CARLCS PRIETO LOSANO. General Manager. INTER - AMERICAN ASSN. OF SANITARY ENGINEERING, Alfonso Herrera, 11-103, Mexico 4, D.F.***

\*\*\*

***Friends House, April 13, 1964.***

Your book on Raw-Eating' came to Friends Service Council and I have been interested to read it. I shall be sending it on to the Library of Friends Vegetarian Society, where I hope it may be useful to others. Thank you for the good work you have been doing in your writing and in living this simple way with the raw natural foods. It seems to me a sign of hope for world feeding and for peace on earth. I believe it should make us more sensitive to spiritual light. At present I am 'vegan' (vegetarian, not taking eggs, milk, honey etc.), so I value your suggestions, and I am thankful that more people are coming to see this as a right way of living. There are now various societies, humanitarians who are vegetarian and peace-loving, and these should help towards world unity.

***QUEENIE DAWE, Friends House, Euston Rd. London, N. W. I.***

\*\*\*

***Israel, 22nd January, 1965.***

Dear Sir,

After reading your book 'Raw-Eating', we would like to read your other books in English... If people would only think and understand that they can be healthier and happier without all the rubbish they are taking into their bodies! You are a prophet of our time.

***M. NEZAH, Dr. Of Naturopathy, Pres. Israel  
Naturopathic assn. Nezah Estate, Mishmar  
Hashiv'a, Israel.***

\*\*\*

Dear Sir:

I have read your book 'Raw-Eating' and I like it very much. It is very interesting in all aspects, for the food must be eaten as nature produces it.

Your fundamental points are the same as those that I have sustained in my books and writings, long ago... I would like to translate it into Spanish, if you accept the idea. If you do not mind, please send me a copy for myself. I am doing a review of it for a Spanish magazine: Bionomia, published at Madrid, Spain...

***A. Severon, Dr. of Naturopathy, Colunga, La  
Riera, Spain.***

\*\*\*

***Boston, July 5, 1966.***

Greetings Mr. Aterhov:

Enclosed you will find ten dollars for seven of your booklets entitled 'Raw-Eating'. This will leave a balance of three dollars to cover the cost of mailing as many of your bulletin No.1 as you possibly can.

We are very much interested in your bulletin No. 1 because it is our intention to mail a copy of it to the many people who write to us in regard to their health problems. We feel certain it will be a blessing to many people.

We will appreciate it if you will give us permission to make mimeograph copies of your bulletin No. 1 since, of course, we would not consider doing this without your permission. If permission is given we will not add or subtract a single word. We are a Non- profit Organization and are sincerely desirous of helping suffering humanity find their way back to the health that nature intended us to have. We are convinced that you are also motivated by the same desire.

I hope, dear Mr. Aterhov, you will give this your personal attention and let me hear from you by air mail as soon as it is convenient for you to do so. We will also appreciate it very much if you will enclose a few of your bulletin No. 1 in your air mail letter."

***Founder, THE RISING SUN, NATIONAL  
MEDICAL- PHYSICAL RESEARCH FOUNDATION,  
INC.***

*Organized in 1908 as the «Fundamental Research Society» by Nicola Tesla, Thomas Edison and Francis Richards. ANN WIGMORE, D. D. Executive President, 25 Exeter St. Boston*

\*\*\*

***Los Angeles, June 23, 1966.***

My dear Frater:

The writer recently came into possession of your ably written and enlightening book, titled 'Raw-Eating', and has very much enjoyed its perusal. He desires to offer you his sincere congratulations upon this learned presentation, and in particular for your courageous support and endorsement of eating uncooked, natural foods.

This dietary procedure has for long been earnestly subscribed to, in fact, when engaged in the manufacture of electro-magnetic therapeutic instruments, he wrote several diets for physicians and nurses about 40 years ago or during 1926, that recommended a predominance of 'raw' foods in the daily diet...

The writer also conducted lengthy research in the fields of electromagnetic emanations and radiations, and later in the vital subjects of agricultural chemistry, involving not only quantitative, but qualitative requirements to meet the alarming needs of humanity today...

Before proceeding further, may we inquire if any of your previous volumes were written in English? It is



observed that one of them was published in Armenian. If so, the writer would like to study same so as to ascertain a fuller degree of understanding your esteemed humanitarian work.

By way of explication, may it be stated that the writer has devoted considerable time and effort to the completion of a comprehensive treatise, that is about concluded, titled 'The Supersensible Rescue of Man', that indeed covers a profound subject...

Before ceasing this missive, may the writer state that your book is a valued contribution to mankind and deserves widespread reading and study? Man fails to reckon that plant life is the only satisfactory food factory, and that neither the animal nor he can exist without the plant, to create and provide in assimilable form the vital minerals and essences in an organic state for his sustenance. He seems to still regard 'raw' as unrefined, crude, unfit and unprepared for his use or enjoyment...

As the great Dr. Alexis Carrel wrote several decades ago: 'Men cannot follow modern civilization along its present course, because they are degenerating. They have been fascinated by the beauty of the sciences of inert matter. They have not understood that their body and consciousness are subjected to natural laws, more obscure than, but as inexorable as, the laws of the sidereal (astral) world. Neither have they understood that they cannot transgress these laws without being punished. They must, therefore, learn the necessary relations of the cosmic universe, of their fellow men, and of their inner selves, and also those of their tissues and their mind. Should he degenerate, the beauty of

civilization, and even the grandeur of the physical universe, would vanish.' Dr. Carrel often alludes to the fact that the building of more and more great hospitals does not overcome the necessity of dealing with causes rather than continuously dealing with effects alone.

So we have much to do to educate humanity and to return to natural fundamentals, common sense and the fulfillment of our duties and responsibilities.

***Dr. ARIHUR B. WALKER, 439 S. Sherbourne Drive, Los Angeles, Calif. U.S.A.***

\*\*\*

***Allegany, N. Y. October 28, 1966.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

One of your books 'Raw-Eating' has come into my hands and I am greatly impressed by its contents; so much so, that I have adopted the Raw Eating regime. I have a farm here where I raise my own fruits, nuts and vegetables organically, and I am interested in helping other through Raw Eating to attain perfect health; so with this in mind I am sending you a bank draft for \$20.00 to cover payment for 30 copies of your book. Also would appreciate several copies of your bulletin No. 1 to give out to my friends...

I will do all I can to promote your book in this country as it has helped me find a good way to real health. I have a big following here in the United States and I am dedicated to the cause of GOOD HEALTH through right eating and living. I am a member of the

American Natural Hygiene Society. I intend to continue to spread the gospel of Raw-Eating' through your book and believe it will bring many more orders in greater quantities for your book. I have a beautiful farm here, and should you come to this country, you are welcome to come and stay as my guest.

**Mr.A.J.RUGGIERI, W. 5 Mile Rd. Allegany, New York. President of GOOD GUYS OF THE GLOBE  
"Peace: Good Will Towards Men"**

\*\*\*

***Meadows of Dan, Sept. 1, 1966:***

Dear Friend, I am a vegan and raw fooder, I preach and teach this. I found your bulletin No. 1 in the Mount Zion Reporter and I cut it out and made a reprint to give out free... Did I trample on your feet by doing this without asking you, and do you give me the right to print more of these to give away free to my sick friend?... I have a precious book 'Nature The Healer' by John T. Richter, but I need to see what you say. Please send me 'Raw-Eating', and if this is equal to Nature The Healer I will need many of them to give to my fellow countrymen. I am a tract writer also, but I am not a doctor...

***Dec. 11, 1966:***

I was more than glad to receive the books along with your good letter... Friend, I think your book is tops; I was looking for a smaller one than Nature The Healer. There is no better work than enlightening people on the value of raw food. I think your book serves my needs

now, as much as the larger book, and it brings out more good things also. Yes, I can use the books you sent... I need some more of your books. I am going on a missionary trip to Florida and I could use a lot of your books on this tour. I am out to spread raw-eating in this form, and I am also called upon to take certain cases over to get them on a raw diet. Right now a lady lies at point of death, almost given up to die by the doctors. She is begging me to assist her in getting on the diet, I hope to do this soon...

***Mrs. I. W. Carroll, Box 240, Meadows of Dan,  
Va. U. S. A.***

\*\*\*

***Israel, August 22, 1966:***

Very Dear Mr. Aterhov. It is with great pleasure that today I finished reading your excellent book RAW-EATING'. If humanity will one day grasp the importance of natural food, this will be the beginning of a new era in the history of human life; it will simply be the PARADISE.

With your permission, let me introduce myself. My name is Joseph Razon, I am 43 years old, came to Israel three years ago and work as a physician in the Kupat Holim Medical Organization. I do not feel happy in my routine daily work, because I am obliged to prescribe drugs (poisons). Though I try to prescribe the least possible amount (*primum non nocere*), I am not satisfied with my poison-pusher practice! I must work because I am a married man! My wife is from Teheran... Having read your book, I thought of writing to you and asking if

you could send us some literature in the Persian language for my wife. I am sure that if she reads about natural food and its effect on the human organism, she will not dare to feed our child (we are expecting a baby) with dead elements!

I would like to give you a few details about my activities in Istanbul a few years ago. I was the General Secretary of 'The Turkish Vegetarian-Hygienist Society' and was one of the most active members of the movement. There the Medical Organizations and the Chemical Industry saw a danger in our vegetarian movement for their poisons and as a Jew I was the feeblest point that they found easy to destroy. They did quite a lot of harm to my person and I was obliged to leave forever the country in which I was born, where I had studied and whose people I loved. But I had to come to Israel. Fortunately, here we can speak and write freely about vegetarianism and natural living. There are more than 20 naturopathic physicians and we have also a village of vegetarians, AMIRIM, near the city SATAD in the Galil mountains!

A week ago I visited this place for the second time, I was feeling happy and wanted to stay and live there. But first of all I must convince my wife. Please, I beg you to send me some literature in Persian about the subject.

It was a pleasure to look at ANAHIT's picture, so charming and healthy. One can feel her health by just looking at her picture.

*November 12, 1966:*

It was a real pleasure to receive your very interesting booklet 'Raw-Eating' in its Persian version. I am grateful to you and hope that my wife will understand the subject better. I also hope that my child will be exempt from the harm of cooked, unnatural food!...In spite of my work in the medical organization I take care of people who want to follow a hygienic way of life. When I was in Turkey I was taking care of my patients as a natural hygienist. Now in Israel I have first to make a living, so I have to work in the medical organization.

Sooner or later I shall have to work in the drugless field only. But without a health resort this won't be satisfactory enough, so together with some naturopathic physicians we are searching for people willing to help us! I hope that in the near future I'll tell you more about it.

***Dr. JOSEPH RAZON, 170/2 Arlozorov St. Kiryat-Malakhi, Israel***

\*\*\*

***Baldwin Park, Calif. April 14, 1966.***

Dear Friend:

I was glad to see your article on Raw-Eating in the 'Mount Zion Reporter' of Jerusalem, Israel. The Editor is my brother. I am glad you told about your book in his paper. I am very interested in more literature on raw food, so I am sending my order, my first, as I intend to spread this much needed truth.

June 20, 1966.

I received your valuable books. They are just what I need... I value the books very much, and hope many people in different nations will find them as I was fortunate enough to do so...

November 13, 1966. I am glad that I can now order some more of your books, 'Raw-Eating'. They are what people need. I wanted to send this order much sooner, but waited till I could spare the money. I think next time I can order sooner, as I have some things taken care of... I live alone, I will be 89 years old on the 5th of Feb. 1967, so I cannot get out with the books and sell them as a young person could. I am writing my name and address in the books and lending them to those who will read them. I want the books to move around so I cannot give them out to lie around someone's house... I have been trying to follow the natural food method as best I knew for nearly all the

last two years. I worked in my garden all this forenoon, and I am not tired...

***ORAF. CARPENTER, Calif. U.S.A.***

\*\*\*

***Alberta, April 9th, 1966.***

Dear Sir,

I am reader of 'Mount Zion Reporter', and am interested in the article 'Value of Raw Food'. I am 75 years YOUNG, and naturally would like to benefit from

the qualities of the raw food diet. I have been an athlete in earlier days—but dedicated to the cooked food diets. The trouble is to get the correct type of vegetables and fruits—free from mineral injections, here in Canada.

***GEORGE BAIN SUTHERLAND, Canada.***

\*\*\*

***Swansea, March 1, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

Early in January, while watching the 'TONIGHT' programme on my television set, I was electrified by a view of your book, and by hearing a few extracts read from it. I was very keen to have a copy of your book. So I wrote up to the B.B.C. for the necessary details of publisher, etc. Alas, I was informed, eventually, that it is unobtainable in this country. However, they sent me the only address they had, so I decided to write to you if only to thank you and wish you every success in spreading your message. I do agree, fervently, that food addiction is the most harmful of all vices. What a different world this could be, if humanity changed its eating customs as urged in your book. Your example is the highest effort for human good in the world today. Hail to you—the supreme Prophet of this age...

April 29, 1964. What a happy day it was last Wednesday when your book and letter arrived. It has absorbed, and sometimes startled me. Above all, it has enlightened and inspired me anew. Since I was a child, when I memorized several quotations at Sunday school, I have sought the TRUTH. ('And ye shall know the truth,



and the truth shall make you free'). The quest led me through different churches, to Rationalism, then to Vegetarianism with Food Reform and Nature Cure and, ultimately to Theosophy with the only acceptable (to me) explanation of life's problems—Karma and Reincarnation. What a long journey it has been. And here, at last, looking at your book, I feel `THIS IS IT'. Thank you for such a wonderful gift, and treasure your letter also...

February 3, 1966. It was a great joy to hear from you again, and to learn from your leaflet of the many successes achieved by those who are following your example... You will be interested to know about my own grandson. He had a nervous breakdown in 1964, and was in a Mental Hospital for a short period. Soon after he came out, I was able to send him a copy of your book... He took to Raw-Eating like a duck to water, and made a wonderful recovery. It changed his whole outlook and personality, and he is now making good headway in his studies. He is an art student at Manchester University.

***Mrs. Gena Harries, 11Hston Place, West Cross,  
Swansea, Glamorgan, England.***

\*\*\*

***Southsea, February 20, 1964.***

Dear Sir,

I would be obliged if you would give me details on how to obtain the book named 'RAW- EATING' by ATERHOV. The British Broadcasting Corporation in

London gave me your address as they informed me that the book was not obtainable in Britian. I would very much like to have a copy.

19th March, 1964. Very many thanks for your book on 'Raw-Eating' which I received last Thursday, the 12th March. The contents of your book were indeed a revelation to me, the most wonderful book I have ever read on the needs and requirements of the human being. I also thought how sincere and heart-warming the theme of the book was throughout. I appreciate the length of study and the time that must have gone into the effort of the devising and preparation of the book. This is a very poor expression of how I really feel about it and I will do my very best to get other people interested, but it will not be an easy task knowing what people are and how reluctant they are to change their habits, especially eating ones. Nevertheless, I will try my hardest to convince them and get them to send for your book... If you are interested, I will let you know from time to time how things are going...

***Mrs. V. M. Snelling, 26 Victoria Rd. Southsea, Hants, England.***

\*\*\*

***Santa Rosa, November 27, 1964.***

Dear Sir,

I had the pleasure of reading your book, 'Raw-Eating', and would like very much to have one for my own. After discussing it with two of my friends, they too, are interested in getting one, so I am enclosing a money

order for \$4.50 for three books... I am most anxious to receive these books... I am a 100 per cent 'raw fooder', and am spreading the good word among those who are interested. Raw foods have saved my life.

*January 21, 1965:*

Upon receipt of 15 copies of 'Raw-Eating' with invoice attached requesting the sum of \$10.00, I am enclosing a bank draft... plus an additional \$10.00 for 15 more copies of Raw-Eating.' "I truly appreciate the opportunity to help people understand the necessity of eating raw foods, through this great work of yours. Thank you.

*February 2, 1965:*

A copy of 'Let's Live' Magazine is yours to read Martin Reinecke's article, 'Adventures in Raw Foods'.

This month's issue carries my letter telling how my husband and I began eating 100 per cent raw foods. We are most enthusiastic about this and will continue to help Martin promote this way of eating, as much as we can.

Your own book, 'Raw-Eating', is simply terrific. I am so pleased to distribute it among people who are seeking this knowledge. It is true that they are very few at the moment, but I believe that in time the understanding will come to many. Working quietly with those who will listen is very satisfying.

*May 6, 1965:*

I received your letter requesting the back issues of 'Let's Live' but I am sorry the Health Food Store has sold all the copies. I am sending you the May issue and will continue sending the following issues unless you would like to take a subscription.

I sent a copy of your letter to Martin Reinecke for correction of his February article as suggested.

I will be interested to have a copy of your second volume when it is complete. I have had good success in selling your first volume and will want to keep some on hand.

***Mrs. Helen M. Bulbeck, 818 Cherry St. Santa Rosa, U. S. A.***

\*\*\*

***Venice, Calif., Sept. 29, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

Thank you very much for two copies of your book 'Raw-Eating' I enjoyed reading it very much.

I stopped eating cooked food five months ago. I am 31 years old and feel very good. Every other day I run 2-5 miles on the beach, swim, hike in the mountains. Three weeks ago I hiked up Mt. Withney in one day. The round trip is 26 miles and the mountain itself is over 14,500 feet high. My pulse rate is 58-60. I tell you all this to let you know that uncooked food is the answer to all the sufferings of mankind.

I might be very much interested in selling your book in the United States (and perhaps in Canada). Please let me know how much you ask for 500 or 1,000 copies...

*February 6, 1966:*

My wife and I are now nearly two years on a 100 percent raw food diet with the very best results. Enclosed I am sending you an article, written by Shirley, my wife, and printed in 'LET'S LIVE' magazine, July 1965. We permit you to use this article and the enclosed pictures. One of the pictures is that of a very dear friend of ours who is a raw-vegan. He wrestles lions (African) barehanded, and these lions have all of their teeth and claws. MICKEY SOLOMON is his name.

We never felt so good in our lives since we eat our food raw. Your book is the best book we own about raw foods, and we read your book often. We would like to spread the truth about raw food... We think that your wonderful book should be made available to many people. Enclosed is a \$20.00 money order...

***Mrs. Shirley & Mr. Thorwald Boie, 1015 Venice Blvd. Venice, Ca. USA.***

\*\*\*

***Columbia, S .C . January 7, 1965:***

I greatly enjoyed an article about your booklet RAW-EATING' in Let's Live Magazine- December 1964. I wrote to the author, Martin J. Fritz, and he advised me to write to the British Vegetarian Magazine and they in turn gave me your address...

**MRS. IRENE GOLEMON, U. S. A**

\*\*\*

*Extract from a letter written by a gentleman in Abadan, after reading my Persian book:*

***Abadan, 25th July, 1965:***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

Your little booklet has brought about a great change in my mental outlook, so that I already regard myself as a raw-eater. I do not know how to thank you. It is no exaggeration to say that I owe my life to you. You are the Jesus of our time, giving life to the sick and the half-dead, and what a sweet life at that!... It seems incredible to me that one may read your book and not change one's way of life.

***SADARAT, Abadan, Iran.***

\*\*\*

*Following the publication of my large volume in Armenian, raw-eating has been gaining a considerable following in Armenia.*

***Yerevan, 24th March, 1961.***

Dear Mr. Hovannessian,

The Central Library of the Academy of Sciences of the Armenia has received with thanks the first volume of your work entitled Raw-Eating. In order to satisfy the

demands of our numerous readers for your work entitled "Raw Eating", please send us five copies of the first volume, in view of the fact that the two copies already sent are always in circulation and considerable delays are incurred in meeting the demands of a great many readers."

***THE ACADEMY OF SCIENCES OF THE ARMENIA, H.MECHERIAN, Director of the Completive Section.***

\*\*\*

*Yerevan, 20th November, 1961:*

Dear Mr. Hovannessian,

We have received ten copies of the first volume of your work entitled 'Raw-Eating', presented to our library, for which we express our sincere gratitude.

*Yerevan, 16th June, 1965:*

The Directorate of the State Library of Armenia wish to express their sincere gratitude for six copies of your book entitled 'Along the Paths of Raw-Eating', which you have presented to the Library.

The number of people interested in raw-eating is gradually increasing and many of them wish to have your books. Could you possibly let us have a few more copies of your publications?

***THE MINISTRY OF CULTURE, ARMENIA,***

*A.M. MIASNIKIAN STATE LIBRARY OF THE  
REPUBLIC,*

*ARAZI TIRABIAN, Director.*

\*\*\*

Subsequently I have often sent twenty to thirty copies of my books to this library, without expecting any return or recompense. Unfortunately because of the problems and limitations imposed on people by Soviet Union (dictatorship against private trading) I meet all requests for books received from the Soviet Union entirely free of charge, regardless of whether such requests come from public institutions or private individuals.

*Extracts from a letter written by the Eminent  
(Armenian poet), Hovhannes Shiraz:*

*Yerevan, 4th January, 1962.*

Dear Ter Hovannessian,

It was by mere chance that I came across your admirable book entitled 'Raw-Eating'. You are destined to become the great savior of the whole of this half-witted mankind. Your discovery, raw-eating, is as great as that of great Darwin; indeed, it is greater and more humanitarian, nay, I should say more philanthropic, than all the great discoveries of preceding centuries. But, alas, there is an invincible rock standing in front of you. If only this blind infant, this so-called mankind, which has been deceived for thousands of years, were to come to its senses, abandon the fire and follow you



along the prudent path that you have opened, there would vanish the violence acts from within the man. But mankind, with all this multitude of races and tribes, still clings fast to the fire, as the moss clings to the rock. It does not abandon its death-bringing cooked food, and will not abandon it yet... Nevertheless, I kiss your sorrowful brow and rejoice at the thought that you were born an Armenian. You are indeed immortal..."

***Hovanes Shiraz, 20 Leninian Ave. Erevan.***

\*\*\*

Right from his childhood the writer of the following letter, a young student, had suffered from many diseases, including measles, scarlet fever, mumps (parotids), malaria, angina, various colds and catarrhs, earache, toothache, constipation, diarrhoea, haemorrhoids, appendicitis and chronic inflammation of the gall-bladder (cholecystitis). Today raw-eating has relieved him from all those sufferings, for which he expresses his gratitude in the following lines:

***Yerevan, 5th February, 1964.***

My dear teacher, I am at a loss for words to express the feeling of gratitude and admiration that I have been entertaining towards you for months now, because all words seem ridiculously inadequate.

By a single magic move you came to end the nightmare that haunted my life, just as, no doubt, you will do the same for other people as well, until the very cause of that nightmare is eradicated-thanks to you.

You came to dispel that open-eyed blindness, that sharp-eared deafness and that unconscious madness into which I was immersed, like everybody else.

You came with a magic lamp to portray against the vault of heaven that countenance which was truly mine and about which until then I was only able to dream and surmise.

I bow before your shining figure and greet you as the man to whom I owe more than I have ever owed to anyone else.

I bow before your shining figure and greet you as the hero whose name is today constantly on the lips of those whom he has saved, but tomorrow it will be on the lips of all.

I bow before your shining figure and greet you as a crusader for real civilization, real science, real progress, and as a fighter for a bright, civilized, scientific future.

***Armen Vshtuni, Perspective Lenin 20, Erevan, Armenia.***

\*\*\*

***Yerevan, 29th March, 1964.***

Dear Hovannessian,

Just a few lines to let you know that raw-eating has had another recruit, whose reason for adopting the new form of nutrition is based not upon any feeling of

despair caused by some illness or other, but upon the ideals inspired by your great thoughts.

I must confess that there are a number of obstacles in my way, because my father is a biologist, while my brother is a doctor, and in my family I am the only one who feeds on a different (normal) diet. It is now nine months that I have changed over to the new method of nutrition and I am enjoying excellent health. It seems to me that letters such as this, coming to you from all the corners of the globe, will multiply in geometrical progression and that you will not have the leisure to read the lines of gratitude addressed to you. Your discovery will go in history.

\*\*\*

***18th June, 1965.***

I am writing from Leningrad. I am continuing my studies in the Conservatoire here. Being always with you, I send you my best wishes, confident in the belief that time is on your side. The medical examinations conducted on me by my brother always give satisfactory results. I feel very well indeed, while my weight keeps on increasing slowly, but surely.

***H. SVATCHIAN.***

\*\*\*

***Yerevan, 6th January, 1965.***

Dear Mr. Hovannessian,

It is now six months that I have been practicing raw-eating. Having full knowledge of the wonderful reception accorded to your book in every part of the world, I do not wish to enter into details and repeat the usual eulogies. Without doubt the conception of raw-eating is the greatest victory achieved by the human mind during the whole course of civilization.

I do not want to write about my personal experiences, because, having read the extracts quoted by you from various letters of appreciation, I realize that my reactions are in full accord with the reactions experienced by other consumers of natural foodstuffs.

Of special significance are the psychological changes that immediately follow, if indeed they do not precede, the physiological reactions.

Allow me to thank you for the unique gift that you have presented to human kind.

***Vladimir Khachaturian, 38 Abovian St. Erevan.***

\*\*\*

*Christmas message from a young lady in Moscow :*

***Moscow, 20th December, 1964.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

It is with pleasure that I send you the greetings of the season, together with my personal thanks and my best wishes for the victory of your great and humanitarian work.

Your follower, who has recovered from her long and serious heart disease.

Subsequently, in a letter of ten pages she gives the full story of her illness and recovery, of which the following is a summary:

*31st March, 1965:*

I changed over to raw-eating in November, 1963. Since then I have never had a moment of doubt. In those days I already had a history of heart disease stretching over a period of nine years.

But let me start from the beginning. When I was eight or nine years old I had an attack of rheumatism. After that about ten times a year I used to contract laryngitis, influenza and colds of every description, which generally lasted six to ten days. Gradually chronic tonsillitis developed. At the age of fourteen doctors discovered mitral valve lesion in my heart and later they found rheumatic carditis. At fifteen they removed my tonsils. I continually suffered from prolonged heart pain, neuritis, debility and insomnia. The short sleep that followed hours of torment was attended by terrifying nightmares. When I woke up in the night, I dreaded the darkness. On the whole, I used to spend three or four months of the year in bed. It was with considerable difficulty that I climbed a single flight of stairs; I was always deprived of walks, physical exercises, swimming, traveling, reading, and a great many other pleasures and recreations.

I was always under the care of doctors. They used to 'cure' me by means of pyramidon, aspirin, antibiotics,

analgesics, vasodilators, soporifics and other similar drugs. My organism kept on protesting in a surprising manner against those measures and my condition gradually grew worse. Being convinced of the inefficacy of such remedies, I finally dispensed with them all.

Please forgive me for occupying your attention with such minute details. It seems to me that they will interest you, especially as the change took place in an astonishing manner. I gave up cooked meals without any difficulty. Raw nourishment awakened in me a pleasant feeling of internal purification and lightness. Almost overnight my heart stopped worrying me. Whereas formerly I used to feel pains in the region of the heart not merely once a week, but almost EVERY DAY and that for HOURS ON END, in the first year of my raw-eating I did not take to my bed for a single day, and the pains in my heart were limited from six to eight MOMENTARY pangs of little consequence. For a year and a half now I have not had a SINGLE attack of influenza or cold. In the very first months my headaches COMPLETELY VANISHED. But the greatest miracle for me was the fact that I began to fall asleep within A FEW MINUTES of retiring to bed. My capacity for work increased; my former dissipation, nervous tension and irritability disappeared.

In the autumn I made a journey to Armenia and worked in the 'Matenadaran' (the Manuscript Repository). What a joy it was to walk twenty-five to thirty kilometres a day in the mountains and then return home with full readiness to repeat the performance at once. I became a free human being, whom nature admitted into her bosom at last. This is a great

happiness indeed, for which once again I should like to express my sincere gratitude.

Moscow, 16th August, 1965. My health continues to give me every satisfaction, especially as my organism has endured quite severe trials of mental and nervous strain (hypertension), as well as considerable physical fatigue sustained during mountain journeys.

I shall soon complete the second year of my raw-eating. I can never think of retreating from raw-eating any more. The questions that I have put to you are purely for enlightenment and must not create in you the least doubt regarding my future. Above all, for me the physical aspects of the question are of less importance than the spiritual bases, which have always been firm and unshakable.

***Olga Kerenskaya, 3Frounze St. Moscow.***

\*\*\*

As my books are not easily obtainable in the Soviet Union, convinced raw-eaters there translate summaries of my publications into Russian and distribute duplicated copies of them among their friends. Many people then copy those summaries from each other. *The following is a portion of a long letter written by an elderly Russian lady living in the district of Moscow:*

***Khimki , April 25, 1965.***

I cannot express or, rather, I am unable to find the proper words with which to express my boundless gratitude to you. There is no reward in this world

worthy enough to recompense your sacred labor for the salvation of the body and soul of mankind, your 'RAW-EATING'. I bow before you and not only before you, but also before the person who brought me this precious recipe for health, comprising several passages extracted from your book. Personally I have not been fortunate enough to see your book. My friend — a former teacher — had copied them out not from your book directly, but from a notebook of a friend of hers — also a former teacher, and it is this lady who is now writing you these lines, because my own eyesight is poor. I can see with only one eye and that by the help of a magnifying glass, otherwise I should have thanked you very much earlier.

I began my practice on the 15th of February and since then I have consumed no cooked food, not even bread... I shall be ninety on August 15, 1966. I am more vigorous than all my friends, and this fact is attested by others, too.

***Karpovna Maria Ivanovna, Fevral'skaya St. 12, Khimca.***

\*\*\*

***Sundsvall, August 12, 1965.***

Dear Mr. Hovannessian,

My aunt and her husband, who are both doctors in Yerevan, Danielian by name, write to me that they have derived a great deal of benefit from your recommendations and warmly exhort me to adopt your method of nutrition and cure. Hence, in my turn I



should like to ask if you could send me a copy of your work entitled 'Raw-Eating', for which I thank you in advance.

I am a gynaecologist from Istanbul. For the last two years I have been working in a hospital in Sundsvall, Sweden. It is with great interest and pride that I shall read your book and your instructions, from which many people have already obtained so much benefit."

***Dr. Shabuh Sedikian, Länslasarett, Sundsvall, Suède.***

\*\*\*

***Moscow, November 19, 1966.***

Dear Mr. Aterhov,

I am surprisingly delighted at the clearness and simplicity of your thoughts. Is it really possible to expound such a great discovery in such a simple manner? 'Oh human! Nature has created and nourished you and your cells with raw food. So long as you are not fully acquainted with the structure and the functional activities of those cells, do not disturb their work by means of various unnatural, poisonous substances.

My wife and I are both post-graduate students. I am a physicist and she is a physician.

We are highly interested in your work...

***MICHEAL MINASIAN.***

***Jermook, March 6, 1966.***

Hail to you, O scientist of scientists! Salute to you, O teacher of humanity!

I am a doctor's assistant at the Health Resort of Jermook in Armenia. I have been practicing raw-eating since the 4th of November, 1965, having been convinced by your book. I am sure that I shall be cured by the method you propagate. Ever since 1947 I had been suffering from rheumatism, polyarthritis and disorders of the coronary arteries. Since 1963 my health had deteriorated still further, owing to a severe inflammation of the kidneys, from which I was able to obtain only partial relief by eating watermelons.

From the sixth day of raw-eating I felt severe pains in my joints, but they ceased subsequently... During the reactions incident to raw-eating I did not experience the swelling of the joints that formerly accompanied every attack of arthritis. Nor did I suffer from the paroxysms of fever and dropsy that used to make their appearance whenever the condition of my kidneys was aggravated. Now I enjoy a really sound sleep and my pulse rate has dropped from 120-140 to 90-100 beats per minute (under conditions of strain). Gone are the nightly pains in my heart, the dandruff on my head and the perspiration on my feet. I have already lost five kilos in weight and my rheumatic pains have vanished. I feel quite well and my strength keeps on increasing.

My wife and my six-year old son too, are adopting raw-eating. I will bring up my third son — now a month

old — in the same way as you have brought up your daughter *Anahit*.

My dear teacher, I have been working as a doctor's assistant for eighteen years and now at the age of thirty-seven I am about to complete a correspondence course at the Pedagogical Institute. Yet it is in your book that I have at last found the answers to a number of problems that have been tormenting me for long — answers which I could not find anywhere else. "One of those problems is why babies cannot walk like the young of other animals from the first day of their birth. I am now convinced that the reason for this and for a great many other physiological defects in children is to be sought in the cooked food consumed by their parents and ancestors. In my view after three or four generations of raw-eaters all those defects will have been eliminated.

***Dr. Vachagan Gasparian, Jermuk, Armenia.***

\*\*\*

My eldest sister lives in Yerevan. I regularly send her large parcels of books, which she presents to those who are seriously ill or who are convinced raw-eaters. *Here are a few extracts from her numerous letters:*

"My dear Arshavir, I know that this letter will give you a great deal of pleasure. Raw- eating is making rapid progress both in Yerevan and in other provinces. Not a day passes without someone ringing or visiting me. They come to seek advice or to ask for books. I present your books to those who are really in need. There is a limitless demand for books, which pass from

hand to hand and are soon reduced to tatters. I am very worried at your habit of sending free books to all who ask. How can you bear such crushing expenses?

You cannot realize how many patients are cured by raw-eating, who are really thankful you. People here are all humanitarians like you. As soon as somebody regains his lost health, he takes upon himself the task of curing his sick relatives and thus five or six others recover from serious disorders. They then come to me and narrate their experiences. People who could not move a step are now able to walk dozens of kilometers.

One of those patients had been suffering from oedema of the hands and feet for twenty years, and weighted no less than 115 kilograms. After adopting a raw-eating diet, he lost 10 kilograms in 20 days. His son said, 'My father, who was formerly not able to move his hands and feet, now walks like a child.' They continually bless you and Anahit. Another patient had been suffering from inflammation of his vocal chords, with an almost total loss of his voice. He has now completely recovered his health after a raw-eating diet of only a month and a half. Again, a young man of 28 had suppuration of the kidneys, accompanied with general dropsy of his whole body. His condition was so serious that all hope had been abandoned for him, but he is now quite well thanks to raw-eating. There are so many similar cases that it is quite impossible to write about them all. According to their own estimates, in Yerevan alone there are now 2,500 raw-eaters, many of whom had long been seriously ill, but are now enjoying perfect health. People are cured of diseases of the heart, salty concretions, high blood pressure, stomach ulcers, inflammation of the kidneys, the liver and the gall-

bladder, calculi and a great many other very serious disorders.

I was very ill myself. I suffered from high blood pressure with ringing in the ears and I had inflammation of the liver. My nose used to bleed two or three times a day, I felt weak and I slept badly. My heart was in such a bad state that every night I wondered whether I should see daylight again. But now I sleep so fast that I do not hear the family go to work in the morning. Indeed, they sometimes feel anxious when I get up too late, thinking that I must be ill. I have slimmed quite a lot and no matter how much I walk, I do not feel tired--to the great surprise of everybody.

Raw-eaters cultivate friendly relations with one another. One evening I was invited to the home of the Colozians. *(Mr. Colozian is a veteran painter in Yerevan. The story of his family is very interesting indeed. He himself had been suffering from chronic stomach ulcer, accompanied with hemorrhage. Refusing to accept medicine in hospital, he changed over to raw-eating and completely recovered from his illness. His wife had a fungus infection (blastomycosis). After four months of raw-eating her nails began to grow and her cough disappeared. Their daughter married, passed her pregnancy on raw-eating and gave birth to her child without a trace of bleeding, she is now bringing up her child on raw nourishment.)*

There were thirty-two complete raw-eaters, in addition to their own family of four. Words fail me to describe the welcome that I received from them. They had prepared a most beautiful and sumptuous table, loaded with appetizing raw salads, five or six kinds of

extremely delicious raw tarts, one of which they had named Anahit, a special 'pilau' of Indian corn decorated with dried fruit soaked in water, and all kinds of fresh fruits and nuts. At the end they brought in a savory dish of mixed wheat, oats, walnuts, raisins.

All the guests were doctors, artists, musicians and lecturers. They made several speeches. Finally it transpired that it was the thirtieth anniversary of Mr. And Mrs. Colozian's wedding.

A fair number of doctors have become raw-eaters. A young physician and his wife, who was also a doctor, came to see me from the Health Resort at Jermook. They told me that they had forty to fifty patients a day, all of whom needed your books. They assured me that the demand for your books might run into thousands. The doctor at Spitak had delivered a lecture about cholera, at the end of which he had spoken about raw-eating and had advised his audience to obtain a copy of your book and, after reading it carefully, to put its recommendations into practice.

A venerable doctor of sixty-four came to me from Kirovakan. He told me that he had been seriously ill, but that, together with his wife, he had adopted raw-eating over a year ago and as a result he had recovered his health. He also told me that the Director of the Chair of Nutritional Hygiene in the Yerevan Institute of Medicine, Dr. A. Harootiunian,\* had given a lecture at Kirovakan in the presence of doctors, patients and, above all, raw-eaters. At the end of the lecture, the question of raw-eating had come up for discussion. A number of raw-eaters, who had been lying in hospitals for months on end without any result and had now been

cured by raw-eating, had demanded that their hospital records should be examined and appropriate comparisons, be made with their present condition. They had also wished to know why the speaker had publicly criticized raw-eating without examining the relevant facts. One of the raw-eaters had even stood up and asked the Kirovakan doctor if he recognized him. Upon receiving a negative reply, he had continued: 'I am the patient whose case you regarded as quite hopeless and whom you discharged from your hospital to die at home. And today, thanks to raw-eating, I am in perfect health.' The doctor had stood dumbfounded."

***Siranoush Babakhanian, 33 Poushkini, Erevan.***

*\*This man (Harootunian) had previously inserted an article in a newspaper called "Communist" published in Yerevan (1964, No. 171), in which without entirely denying the benefits of raw-eating! He had restricted its use to limited cases of certain diseases only, and at the same time he had eulogized the pernicious animal proteins and artificial vitamins. Finally, he had warned his readers not to feed on natural foodstuffs without a doctor's advice. To these assertions I have already given a crushing reply in my Armenian work entitled "Along the Paths of Raw-eating".*

\*\*\*

*This lady is the mother-in-law of the famous Armenian singer (Ofelia Hambardzumyan), a very intelligent lady who has written me thirteen letters so far, I will mention some of them as follows:*

**November 20, 1966:**

Dear Mr. Hovannessian,

"Almost two months ago, I read your raw-eating book, which was lent to me for just one day, with such excitement, enthusiasm and taste, word for word, that the pen is unable and unable to describe. In the past, I was blindly rushing towards death, with the mark of a false body attached to my face for many years. But it disappeared early at the raw-eating.

I hadn't finished reading your masterful book yet, when I sent all the cooked food and medicine bottles and capsules that were never separated from me to trash bin. It was my 61st birthday when I accepted this gift from you and decided to be a raw vegan. I will never forget this day; You can guess very well what changes occurred in my destroyed body. In the past years, under the pressure of various diseases, I had a troubled life. Especially the suffocating quater's disease and unbearable sciatica had stolen sleep from me. After being freed from the cruel grip of diseases, I became an active, strong and stout person and ran around like a deer all day long. I can't find words to express my gratitude; O genius of geniuses, my dear friend...

Please accept the greetings of a distant friend who is proud that her last name is the same as yours (Ter Hovannessian). Now I can't stand how people put toxic substances into their bodies? I suffer when I remember how, as a result of ignorance, I used to invite my loved ones to my house and give them cooked stuffs with my own hands.

Before raw-eating my heart beat informed me of a stroke, which in my opinion was considered a pleasant



and easy death, But now I want to live to read with my own eyes and hear with my own ears that my brother's name is on the tongues of the whole world. Your work is wise, the cooked food must be overthrown, victory will come to you. "

August 2, 1967:

"Now perfectly healthy and prosperous, like a real human, I send you my third letter. The feelings of my heart are so many that I am unable to write them on paper; I owe my present health to you O savior of mankind, O my dear brother, may I call you my brother?

When I did not receive an answer from you for my two previous letters, I borrowed your big book from my friends and copied all of it in three thick notebooks. Now this copy is changing hands. Later, I found out that you sent books and letters, but they did not reach me.

Here, the number of believers in raw veganism is increasing day by day; There are doctors among them too. Most of them come to me for some questions, I promote raw food; I make cakes, halvah, salads and raw dolmeh and show them to people, I print their instruction and distribute them among people, I write your name on the cakes with raisins; I bought one of these cakes for your sister. She cried, hugged me and said, "From today we are two sisters. The door of my house is always open to you." She gave me the second volume of your book.

I often meet your sister, read your letters and documents, I look at the photos, I looked with great compassion at the photos of your two children who were

wasted by "fortifying" foods and "effective" drugs; They have been sacrificed, but instead today thousands of people are saved from certain deaths and send greetings in their memory. Great geniuses in the past have left their work unfinished due to this type of foods and medicines and have perished... and only you have revealed this secret. Let the tongue be mute that dares to deny these facts.

Now let me talk a little about myself. I think it would be interesting for you to know what I was like before I started raw-eating and what I am like now. I was seventeen years old when I had severe pain on the right side of my back. The doctors could not understand the cause and only made me uncomfortable with medicines and massages. After six years, I was finally taken to the hospital dying. It turned out that my right kidney is full of stones and pus. The professor who operated on my kidney was an intellectual person who, if he were alive, would have signed your discoveries with both hands; He told me that doctors have eaten half of your kidney due to massages and harmful drugs and laughed. He ordered me to forget eating meat, eggs, pickles, mineral waters and salty foods forever and eat more vegetables and fruits.

I followed this order for two or three years, when I felt better, I started eating everything again. Little by little, my appetite increased and my weight increased day by day; Like others, I thought this was a sign of health, but it turned out to be the opposite. First, a severe headache began, then my legs swelled, and at the age of forty-four, artificial teeth were replaced by natural teeth. My body weight reached eighty two kilos; Shortness of breath, chronic cough, palpitations and a

sour stomach surrounded me. Later, a goiter appeared, which surrounded my neck like a hard egg. The doctors wanted to operate, but I refused. Then, sciatica, arteriosclerosis, blood pressure, hemorrhoids, gout, etc. had weakened my whole body to the extent that I could not walk.

My room was like a pharmacy of aspirin tablets, pyramiden, valocardin, milocardin, analgin, beloid, capodiazit and other poisons, which made up half of my food. I was disappointed with the doctors and because everyone said that these symptoms are related to age, I thought that the end of my life had come. I was tired of this world and I just wished that a simple stroke would end these humiliations. It never occurred to me that a miracle might appear and save me from this nightmare. But this is joined. Now seventeen kilos devil is disappeared (the letter writer forgets that her original body has accumulated seventeen kilos of fresh and healthy cells during this raw eating period, that is, the devil was not seventeen kilos, but thirty-four kilos and maybe even more) and I walk from one end of the city to the other end of the city with a real weight of sixty-four kilos and climb the 132 steps of the cognac factory with heavy luggage to my sister's daughter who is in the clinic there and because workers and the doctors of there are completely familiar with my previous condition, they are surprised. Especially when they take my blood pressure and see thirteen instead of nineteen. This will make them change their opinion and actually the truth wins. I prepare delicious raw vegan food in my house and take it to them, they eat and I say: "Hovannessian sends his books to the whole world for free. I also treat people with raw food, eat as much as

you like." I have been living in this happiness for ten months now...

I want to say a few words about my detox. The pain of my diseases was so intense that I didn't feel the first reactions of detoxification, only the more I ate, the more I couldn't get enough. A red rash appeared on the left side of my body, which was also painful, but it was soon resolved. My skin got dry in some places, itched, got dandruff and it got better; The color of my urine was sometimes bright red and sometimes white and thick, but now it is clear like water. I had a few severe headaches that got better on their own. From the first day of raw food, I forgot that there is medicine in this world. I can't believe that my white hair has turned gray now and is recovering into its original colour."

Letter No. 12 - May 7, 1971

"I have so much news that I don't know where to start and where to end. One day I went to the hospital for some administrative work, I saw a female doctor holding your book in her hand, gathering several other doctors around her and enthusiastically explaining how her brother-in-law was saved from serious kidney disease by raw veganism. Then she said: "The letter of the mother-in-law of Ofelia Hambarsoumian is also in this book." It seems that she didn't know me. I looked at the book and saw that it was a photocopy of the same book that I had signed and given to people. Because your book is very rare, it will be photocopied so that more people can use it. When this doctor recognized me, she asked me to go see a patient one day. I went on the day we had fixed. The former patient named Ozonian, now completely healthy, had organized a

lavish party; He is a veterinarian, his wife is a doctor, his brother is a university professor, his wife is also a doctor, several journalists and some new raw-eaters gathered together. Dr. Abajian from Kirovakan, entered with several of new raw-eating followers.

Ozonian wrote a letter to your old address a year ago when he was seriously ill, but I think it did not reach you. This letter is so interesting and valuable that I am copying it and sending it to you. As you can see in the letter, he was so sick a year ago that they were disappointed in him, but now he is doing his work with completely health; *Ozonians letter:*

- *"I don't know in what language to express my surprise and respect to you who is the greatest philanthropist and the greatest scientist of this age. Although as a result of my kidney disease, I am so weak that I am unable to write a few words even to my closest relatives, but I am writing to you with all joy. You are the only person in the whole world that I can write to, but I can't not write. My brother brought your book and insisted that I read it, I sat in bed just so as not to offend him and reluctantly started reading the book that was torn from reading too much; But I could not give up this enchanting book, because its sharp and passionate language, as well as your deep and iron thoughts, enchanted my whole being. It was the tragic death of these children that sent you to the hidden cellars of the scientific ocean in search of the truth. Deep sadness caused you to become the sun of biology. For this, humanity is indebted to your two children and their names will always remain in the memory of the nations. After*

*reading your book, I immediately went raw and without waiting for the healing result, I express my gratitude. Because I was sure of the truth of your statements; Because I am a veterinarian and I am very familiar with biology, I could better understand the greatness of your words. All the ideas of biological science, which had been deeply rooted in my brain for decades, changed in one day. I am sure that the future will bow before your greatness, because no great discovery has ever been hidden. I am 40 years old. I have chronic nephritis, my condition is very serious. My blood nitrogen is 65-90 and it does not go down. Lying in bed, just breathing for you, I'm sure I'll be fine. I will be indebted to my mother for giving birth to me and indebted to you for the continuation of my life, forever..."*

Another interesting news: one of the journalists of "Science & Life" magazine came to Yerevan from Moscow to conduct research on the development of living creatures.

Several doctors and experienced raw-eaters have gathered in the house of a raw-eater reporter and he has written a report. He looked for me, and on November 15th, 1971, letter number 13 (I had written a detailed letter to the editor of "Avangard" newspaper) apparently had an effect, because I was informed by phone that a specialist in diseases of the digestive system, Professor Jivan Shmavonyan, wanted to meet me and some other raw-eaters. What could I do but perform a party for the active raw-eaters. A few days before party, I took a leave of absence from the office

and without any embarrassment, I tried to set a table that would be new for live eaters as well.

Raw bread, biscuits, basaq, as well as various raw jams made from flower leaves, pomegranate seeds, even from green walnuts that I make every year in the spring, and also with various salads, I had decorated three large tables so much that it is difficult to say. For a while, no one dared to touch the three big cakes on which your name shines. Finally, I cut it and played it. The table moaned from the weight of fruit and fruit juice!



*Aterhov's sister (Siranush BabaKhanian) is seen in the middle, on her left is professor Shmavonyan, and Haikanush Ter Hovannessian is standing behind her.*

Meeting was scheduled on October 24, 1971 at 16:00. Two hours ahead, I sent for your sister so that the first arrivals would shake hands with her as your

representative. First of all, the honorable professor himself entered and shook my hand with both his hands with a smiling face and met your sister with great respect. In another moment, all the raw eater guests were doctors, university professors, journalists, teachers, etc., about forty-five people entered at once. I was shocked, just then Dr. Abajian arrived in his car with four agile and cheerful ladies from Kirovakan; He first talked about his illnesses and sent his gratitude to you for getting rid of these diseases and wished the bests for you and your health.

Then all the live-eaters gave a speech one after the other and gave a detailed explanation about the past illnesses and current health. The professor was sitting quietly, listening carefully and making notes in his notebook. Most of the guests did not know him, when he stood up and introduced himself after the live-eaters' reports were finished, everyone sat and began to listen silently. He began to speak slowly about his intentions and plans.





*One of the university professors reads Hovannessian's letter. Dr. Abajian is sitting on his left side.*

He said: "Hovannessian has actually done a great job. History shows that most famous scientists came from ordinary people; Although Hovannessian is not a doctor, but with his discovery, he stands above doctors and has the right to be a scientist. Although he has enemies, but the truth is that he wins. All of you have said, quoted, but these words remain with you. You should organize a population, take statistics of all the live eaters, determine what diseases they had in the past and what their condition is now, and provide us with these documents". According to his proposal, a committee of 15 people was selected, and my name was also registered in it. We decided to form such a meeting once every three months.

The professor said that he thought of establishing a raw-vegan sanatorium, there was also talk of establishing a raw-vegan restaurant. In conclusion, with the professor's request, I presented some photocopies of your letters, of the letter from the Indian government, of the letter that I had written to "Avangard", and of the letter of Ozonian and Makarian. He ate all the salads and other dishes with great pleasure and asked how to prepare them. I distributed ten copies of the salad forms that I had to the guests. This is not one of the versions I sent you, this one is brand new and complete.

The meeting lasted from 16:00 to 21:00. When leaving, the proffecor gave one of his cards to me and another to Siranoush and asked us to always be in touch with him. He said to Siranoush: "I really wish to see your brother, to consult and to jointly prepare an effective plan to reach the destination soon. It is difficult to get permission to travel abroad; Write to your brother, maybe he can use his influence to prepare an invitation"

Professor's address: Jivan Mambre Shmavonyan ,  
Papazian No. 17, Yerevan."

***Haikanoush Ter Hovannessian, 10 Alaverdian  
St. Erevan.***

\*\*\*

*Letter from the government of India:*

**Indian Information Service - T.S. Kanwar**

Tehran, January 4, 1971, Embassy of India. press  
associate

"As we have been informed, you have published a book under the title of "Raw-eating". You may inform that the government of India has appointed a decision-making committee for Nature Cure, which conducts studies on the progress and development of Nature Cure. Your book has been given to this committee, which recognizes it and thinks it would be a good work. Therefore, the Ministry of Health and Family Planning of India is thinking of selling this huge book cheaply (only five rupees) to distribute it. They won't profit from the sale of this publication.

We would be very grateful if you would kindly give permission to the government of India to publish this book in English and in other twelve local languages.

Also, please let us know if this book has been updated since the 1967 edition. Or do you want to modify it in the near future?

Therefore, we will be grateful if we have the necessary permission to be able to publish this book in India."

**T. S. Kanwar.**

*It is the most active health institution in India, which was established in 1964 by Mahatma Gandhi. They regularly distribute my books and bulletins in India. The Ministry of Health of India has been introduced to my book by this institution. Here are some parts from the letters that the director of that institution wrote to me:*

"I had read about you five years ago in the British Vegetarian Magazine, which I did not pay much attention to and had almost forgotten; Until last month, a Mexican lady who runs a sanitarium there stayed with us for three weeks and spoke highly of raw food. Since then, I have been impatiently trying to contact you and order a book, but how could I find your address? But a few days ago two people came to us who have been on raw food for five years and gave me your address. This institute was founded by Gandhi and I was fortunate to work there for ten years during the last years of his life.

**NATURE CURE CENTER, Uruli- Kanchan, India**

\*\*\*

***President of the Israel Vegan Society, chief editor of "Nature and Health" magazine:***

"Thank you very much for your sent bulletins. We try to get them to those who want to use them the most. We have sold a hundred volumes of your books so far; In a small country where most of the population does not know English, selling so many books is really a great success. I am sending you a cover of the magazine "Nature and Health" (TEVA UBRIUT), in which the beautiful photo of six-year-old Anahit is also printed. Now I am preparing an article to print with a photo of twelve-year-old Anahit."

**Jaacov Grabois, 10 Hateyna St. Nevey Oz. Israel**

\*\*\*

This doctor is the president of the British Vegetarian Society, who has a practice in London, and after reading my book, she was convinced and gives my address to her patients and prescribes the raw eating book. The following letter proves this:

"I read your book about raw food. Dr. Lato prescribed a raw food diet to treat my cancer. He gave me your address so that I can order the book from it. I will send ten dollars by mail and please send me three books and six bulletins."

**Mrs. Campbell Moodie, 31 Linden Garden,  
London, W. 2**

\*\*\*

***Mrs. VERA STANLEY ALDER:***

"Dear glorious friend, I carefully read your book twice and felt that this book will usher in a new era for humanity. It is very necessary to put this book in front of people's eyes so that finally there is a general vibrancy in the world. You are a genius who was able to recognize the simple and perfect truth and explain it more correctly than all the nutritionists whose books I have read so far.

For years, I have been stressing to people that man is a fruitarian and this is how the world's problems will be solved and a golden world will be created. Your motto ("don't cook") eliminates all the reasons, measures, moderations, with a simple and basic order. You will eliminate the statistics and so on that have been discussed so far, and in their place you will

provide people with real health and happiness. Your discovery, like the discovery of electricity, is the work of a genius, and perhaps the people who understand you are also geniuses.

I will do whatever it takes to make your book famous; I am currently editing a book, writing another book and giving lectures. The days are too short to do these things. Now the situation in the world is critical, but my husband and I are encouraged, in terms of knowing that you and your work and your success are still in this world. Please accept that we are very close to you.

I am sending you one of my books. "We have been vegan for years, we don't smoke or drink alcohol, and now my husband and I are using your method."

**«WORLD UNION FELLOWSHIP» 8 First Avenue,  
London.**

\*\*\*

***ESSENCE OF HEALTH, Highest Health and Life  
Law Publishers:***

*April 29, 1968:*

"I received your book. Not only do I find this book to be excellent, but it fits perfectly with my thoughts, actions, and writings. Now we are publishing a magazine called "ESSENCE OF HEALTH". In addition to the publication of this magazine and my personal books, I want to sell foreign books that show people the right way. For this purpose, it is certain that your book

should be included among my books, so please let me know about the terms of the wholesale discount."

*May 24, 1968:*

"I am happy to send you a \$82.5 check for fifty volumes of raw food books. If you are willing to give us the rights to print the book, we will gladly accept it. We have all the tools to publish it."

**Box 2821, Durban, South Africa.**

\*\*\*

***DAULAT RAM PUBLIC MISSION:***

"You will be surprised to receive this letter; Believe me, after seeing your book, all the members of the board of directors of this institute were not only deeply affected, but also completely convinced that only through raw food can the population be saved from all diseases. Our community is a charity organization. We have decided to implement raw food movement in India. If you allow us to print your book in English and local languages, we will distribute ten thousand copies for free in the first place. We will also contact the Ministry of Health so that they also consider this issue in their activities. We decided to prove the truth in hospitals as well.

We know that your philosophy has its opponents in terms of personal interests, but in a country like India, where most of the population is poor and hungry, raw food will find a suitable ground and will cause millions of human beings who as a result of cooked food and

habits and wrong customs suffer, be saved. "Later, when your book is published and the result is achieved, we will send an invitation to come to India with your family and see the result with your own eyes."

**Krishan Mohan, Vice Pres. 17- B, Asaf Ali Rd.  
NewDelhi**

\*\*\*

After receiving the letter from the Indian embassy, I decided to try again and inform the authorities of our country about this victory. First, I wrote the following letter to Shahanshah Aryamehr MohamadReza Pahlavi, attached a volume of Persian, English and Armenian books to the Imperial Office. *The letter:*

"I am proud to bring you the extremely happy news that may be difficult to imagine at first.

As a result of my thirty years of efforts, studies, research and experiences, today it has been definitely proven that the causes of all diseases are caused by the consumption of cooked foods, chemicals and other dead substances that people unknowingly put into their bodies. I became convinced of this when I lost two of my beloved children, one at the age of ten and the other at the age of fourteen, as a result of the prescription of "effective" drugs and "fortifying" foods by famous doctors. A detailed book that I had written in Armenian was printed and published in 1960, then in order to inform my Persian fellow countrymen in 1963, I temporarily published a small pamphlet in Persian, a copy of which I presented at the same time. The mentioned book was noticed by Mr. Pahlbod, Minister



of Culture and Arts. He summoned me and after several meetings introduced me to Dr. Abbas Nafisi, Secretary General of Red Lion and Sun. Mr. Dr. Abbas Nafisi and Dr. Abolqasem Nafisi, the head of Khaje Nouri Maternity Hospital, liked my ideas and opinions and promised all kinds of assistance and cooperation; For the purpose of preliminary investigations about raw food, they introduced me to the Nemooneh Orphanage and the Number One Nursery and the Bahrami Children's Hospital. Unfortunately, I encountered some difficulties there, because it was necessary to separate some doctors and employees from old wrong ideas and to familiarize their thoughts with new ideas, therefore, due to postponing the work, my efforts remained fruitless and I temporarily abandoned the pursuit of the matter. Of course, with great regret, especially since I closely observed the harmful effects of their wrong eating habits.

Basically, the administrators of the mentioned institutions as well as all the doctors did not pay attention to the real effect of dead food and only fed cooked and non-vital food to all the patients, like restaurants, which cause diseases 100%. After the lack of success in my own country, I decided to express my ideas to the scientists of foreign countries, so that maybe in this way I can obtain valid and undeniable evidence to implement my plan in my homeland. Now that the time has come, I feel it is my sacred duty to convey this important information to you who have shown your intention to the world with the *white revolution of shah and people*.

My English book was first printed and published in 1963, and it has been sold. Then, in 1965, I published

the second book in Armenian language and two years later I translated the same book in English language, by which I have sent each of them to you. I sent ten thousand volumes of these books and about half a million free leaflets to the politicians of foreign countries, to newspapers, institutions, universities, etc. with my personal means and resources. This year again, I printed ten thousand pamphlets in Armenian language to provide to people for free. The result of these activities was that today in the countries of the world, especially in America, India and Armenia, there are hundreds of thousands of people who are Raw-Vegan, most of them were patients who were disappointed with the doctors, and now they continue their lives in perfect health. I receive thousands of letters of thanks from them. Almost all the vegans and naturopathic doctors and other progressive health institutions spread my books and leaflets and start extensive advertisements about raw veganism; They publish my announcements in their newspapers, they build sanatoriums for raw veganism. In Mexico, a raw food orphanage is established. My book is being translated in Spanish in Argentina and in Hindi in Delhi and is currently being printed. The BBC presented my book on TV and read parts of it to the people; Philanthropic doctors in Europe, America, etc. give my address to "incurable" patients and recommend reading the raw-eating book. Biologists of Yerevan Academy defend and support my views in the monthly magazine "Science & Technics".

Since my big book in Armenian was published ten years ago, the number of raw eaters in Yerevan increased. They establish relationships with each other and organize parties and celebrations based on raw eating. Many doctors are also seen among these raw

food eaters; The head and professor of the nutrition department of Yerevan University organizes lectures on raw eating, and in these gatherings, people who have been saved from severe diseases give their reports.

For example, a female doctor who suffered from paralysis and was unable to move for four years, stood up after fourteen months of raw food and is now in perfect health. Another interesting example: one of my relatives, a twenty-eight-year-old young man, was suffering from nerve weakness and could hardly move his arms and legs; He did not pay attention to my free instructions, traveled to Europe three times and spent more than one million Rials until finally he received the raw-eating book in Lausanne from a famous neurologist who had read my book and got to know the truth. He returned to Tehran.

There are thousands of similar documents in the relevant file and I am ready to present them to any appointed person . After all, the greatest success that has come to me recently is that the government of India has officially recognized my book as useful and has decided to publish it and recommend its reading to the people of India so that they can follow the instructions of the book. and be saved from disease, poverty and hunger.

Today it is definitely proven that those who avoid the consumption of cooked foods, poisonous drugs and other dead substances are free from all diseases, whether light or heavy, such as heart attacks, cancer, diabetes, infectious diseases, colds. etc are saved. The available documents prove well that as new hospitals are opened, the number of patients increases

proportionally; Because hospitals, pharmacies and kitchens are the source of disease outbreaks; Therefore, there is no need to build new hospitals, but conditions should be created so that hospitals are left without patients and are closed one after another, and this condition is only in changing the way people eat. Contrary to what some people think, it is very easy to do this.

As the government of India has decided, first of all, it is necessary to recommend the nation to read the book of raw food and secondly, it should be officially announced that cooking is an unnatural and non-vital act. There should be a limit to the false and misleading advertisements of dead foods, poisonous drugs and chemical vitamins. Instead of distributing poisonous drugs among the farmers, the Health Corps officers can teach them how to grow from some live vegetables. and sprouted wheat, prepared delicious and cheap healthy foods, or how a person can fully satisfy his body with two rials of live wheat, two rials of dates and two rials of vegetables and live without disease. Through the press, radio and television, it is possible to warn and prescribe to the nation about the changes in eating habits, the preparation of live and really invigorating natural foods; Hospitals can be gradually converted into sanatoriums; The way of feeding nurseries, orphanages and hospitals should gradually become obligatory raw-vegan. As a result, people move these sanatoriums to their homes and become their own doctors. Soon the hospitals will be empty of patients and will be closed one after another. Consumption of all kinds of tobacco, drinks, meat, fish and other harmful substances will gradually decrease.

Almonds, pistachios, dates, raisins and such valuable food items and many other fruits and vegetables are exported to other countries at the lowest prices, this should be stopped and no export should take place. So here-grown food will be consumed by our own people and as a result, people's living standards will rise and their negative attitude will decrease. Thefts, crimes and forgery will disappear. This, which seems impossible at first, will become a reality in our homeland within a few years.

We should not pay attention to the absurd, false, and misconceptions of some money-loving and ruthless doctors, because they have not only been unable to find the smallest remedy to prevent diseases with their claims, but also with their wrong actions and mistakes had caused the spread of these diseases. The answer to all these discussions is only the definite result of work and action. If the result obtained in my family is not enough for them, as well as among the raw food eaters who are scattered in other countries, if I receive enough facilities and means, I am ready to prove and prove the truth of my claim with action in a short period of time.

My request is that you patiently read the books and notices that I have sent to you in English."

\*\*\*

**"To the presence of the greatest savior of humanity from poverty and disease:**

I am a retired officer of the Imperial Army, who retired with eighteen years and three months of experience due to excessive obesity in the year 2524

*(Iran Imperial calendar)* according to the decision of the Medical Council of the Army according to the file of my serious illnesses that was arranged. Before I retired for a while to treat my obesity, which I had gained around 125 Kg, slimming pills such as Metrical were prescribed and I took them, and as a result my weight reached 150 Kg and kept increasing. Until I was completely deprived of the power to work. Then, by prescribing vitamins, kebabs and other foods, I also got asthma. It was decided to retire me, that is, without benefits, that is, with incomplete salary. At this time when my asthma was torturing me, they sent me to the allergy department of the hospital No. 502 of army and gave me eighteen types of injections in my hands, and every one of them that swelled up, they said that you are allergic to those things, of course they all swelled up, but two or three They considered them as soon as the petition was not empty and said that you are allergic to them and you should do injections three times a week; As a result, I got heart asthma and by prescribing other pills such as Valium, breast syrups and deadly drugs, my kidney failed and severe abdominal swelling pains. Then my weight increased from 160 Kg and again by taking the strong corten tablets prescribed by the doctor, I got fatter every day and I got so-called Courtney obesity and I was again sent on a stretcher to the ward of the same hospital for eternal treatment! After the umbilical hernia surgery, the doctor told me that I emptied thirty million units of penicillin into your stomach; Now I understand that with this penicillin, I had reached the threshold of death. At this time, my little daughter had heart rheumatism and had to inject one million two hundred penicillin (Penador) every week until the age of 18. On the other hand, my little son's legs were crooked from the sides and he was

suffering from so-called rachitis. My wife, who suffers from poverty and many diseases of me and my children, filed a complaint to the family support court and asked for alimony, and I was unable to pay alimony due to my low salary, I divorced her, which means saving her from this miserable life. I stayed with five sick and orphaned children. Every day, when I went to the doctors with health insurance booklets, a large amount of the booklets were filled and a large amount of my salary was embezzled in the form of visits, ECG and laboratory fees. I would also lose some of my salary for the insurance franchise. Until the bookkeeper of my child's school, who noticed my situation, suggested me the raw eating book. I read this book with full enthusiasm and I accepted its contents and together with my children we started to eat 100% raw vegan. Within a few days my asthma cleared up; Then my daughter's condition gradually improved and my little son's legs straightened, and I resumed my youth. Within six months, my weight decreased from about 160 to 70 Kg. During this time, by eating completely raw, I have regained the life and freshness of a child and I have vowed to myself that I will never touch deadly food. I owe my salvation from misfortune to your book."



***Mr. Akbar Tofangchi- No. 11, Khazaei Alley,  
Arabians neighborhood, Naser Khosrow St,  
Tehran.***

\*\*\*

*The writer of this letter is a lady who comes to Tehran Raw Vegans club every day after her work and helps us in the club, and sometimes she even captures some videos from the club works:*

**“How I overcame cancer by raw veganism:**

Soon I will be celebrating my second anniversary of going raw. Just two years ago when my cancer pain was increasing in intensity, I was introduced to a raw food book that completely changed my life. In fact, this book saved my life.

On 2533/2/21 (*Persian imperial calendar*) I felt something strange in my right breast. A little upset, I went to the doctor, but the X-ray did not show anything unusual. After two months, the pain started and soon got worse. Visiting doctors for treatment began.

On 2533/6/25 with my permission, surgery was performed; When I regained consciousness, I noticed that my right breast had disappeared, my right hand was numb.

My mood did not change much until on 2535/1/5, when I felt pain in my left thigh, I went to several doctors and after taking several photos, they diagnosed bone cancer and ordered a computerized report of osteotomy from head to toe. Take in another surgery to



prevent the disease from progressing, my uterus and ovaries were also removed. Forty days passed... the doctors said that I should be hospitalized again. I decided to go abroad and continue the treatment there. I went to Israel; After they removed my right breast, they took pictures of my lung and liver every three months. A lot of radiation penetrated my body. They treated me with cobalt for forty sessions, in each session they put cobalt on one side for three minutes and on the other side for three minutes. In Israel, they started taking pictures and X-rays again, they took pictures of my goitre, which I had operated on years ago.

Finally, my doctor explained the whole process to me and said: "They removed your chest late, this disease attacks three parts of the body, lungs, liver and bones; You have advanced bone cancer. The head of your femur has become so thin that I wonder how it didn't break while sitting on the airplane chair?"

In Israel, they gave fifteen sessions of cobalt. I returned to Tehran with a suitcase full of photos, letters, prescriptions and instructions. I had chemotherapy for a week in Tehran, and from seven in the morning to two in the afternoon, they put salt on my head. Because they stopped the hormones, my body weight increased from sixty-eight kilos to eighty-three kilos. They even predicted that my hair would fall out and I would grow a beard and mustache. One day, when I wanted to take a capsule, when I read the brochure, I saw that it was written that this drug has up to twelve adverse results and possibly death; But I was still alive so I decided to stop annoying myself.

Ten months later, the most important change in my life happened. When one of my friends, who was paralyzed himself, told me that he felt much better after a month of going raw vegan, I decided to become a raw vegan too. The next day, I went to the raw vegans club with a sick and disappointed body to learn about their nutrition method. I ate half raw and half cooked for a few days, I was encouraged more and more and finally I became an absolute raw eater. By eating raw for the first month, a miracle happened in my body. My eyebrow hair, which had completely fallen out, started re-growing; I had more energy to walk, my eyesight improved and I felt revived. One day I fell from stairs on the marble floor of the central insurance office; I felt like I would be paralyzed. With those two months of raw food, there were so many changes in my body that when they took pictures of my pelvis and legs again, the doctor said: "Your bones are healthier than mine." There were no traces of those deep wounds left in my body. I have kept all the documents and photos before and after raw food. Today, after two years of raw veganism, I have completely changed. I did not take any medicine during this time. My right hand, which was completely numb after the surgery, is back to normal. My body, which was full of pimples under the skin after chemotherapy and was in severe pain, got better and the pimples disappeared. During this time, I lost twenty kilos. Now I work eight hours a day and I am very active in my free time. I hope to spend my time happily and healthily in this new life."



**Maryam Neshan Barjan, Born on July 25, 1931 - Tehran**

\*\*\*

These and thousands of other letters received from raw-eaters of various nationalities all over the world prove that those patients who stop the use of drugs and cooked food are immediately and invariable cured of every kind of disease once for all.

The "AVANGUARD" newspaper, which is published in Yerevan, the capital of Armenia, writes in one of its issues (1964, No. 98): "A number of engineers, musicians and painters, all of whom are people of learning, have become raw-eaters. They assure you that they feel so light and healthy that they do not perspire and do not feel the palpitations of their hearts."

The Moscow journal called "SCIENCE AND LIFE" confesses in its March, 1965 issue that there are many raw-eaters amongst its readers, who have been cured of various diseases and have informed the editors of the full details of their recovery.

In the circumstances one cannot understand why biologists and other responsible authorities do not take active measures to implement the principles of raw-eating. Why do they hesitate when the way has been found to reach their final goal of freeing mankind from diseases and ensuring a happy life for everybody? If they choose, they can cure every sick person within two months and empty the hospitals of their patients. It is the duty of every noble person to ask them whether they wish to achieve this aim or not.

I solemnly declare to the whole world that  
HENCEFORTH THE PRESCRIPTION OF POISONOUS  
MEDICINES AND THE RECOMMENDATION OF  
COOKED FOODS ARE TO BE REGARDED AS THE

MOST HEARTLESS CRIMES AGAINST HUMANITY,  
BECAUSE THEY ARE THE FACTORS THAT CAUSE ALL  
HUMAN ILLNESSES.

\*\*\*



*Beautiful 7 years-old white dog, Jackie lives with us  
as a raw vegan from the first of his life.*

Now it is easily proven that meat eating is unnatural even for other animals, and we don't have real carnivores. Jackie has been accustomed to the food we eat since birth. Most of his food consists of wheat, dates, raisins, pistachios, salads and various fruits, all of these in live (raw) form, because in our house there is not even a single gram of dead food. This dog even eats onions and radish with great desire. When we take him outside the city, he grazes like a lamb in the green

meadows. Compared to other dogs, this dog is extremely healthy, fresh and full of energy. If we want to accustom the cubs of lions, leopards and wolves to eat plants like this dog, after a few generations they will completely abandon their ferocity and become calm, and they can live together with other animals such as cows. But on the contrary, we can never get cows used to eating meat.

### **What should be avoided?**

The dried fruit that has been processed with sulfur or sharp water or with other chemicals should not be consumed, because it has no nutritional value and is only a poisonous substance, so that even worms do not approach it. You should not consume that olive oil that has been filtered with chemicals and hasn't its natural color or smell and taste and has lost its nutritional value. Salted olives, pickled cucumbers and pickles prepared with salt or vinegar are not considered living and natural foods. Also, vinegar, wine and such edibles that have returned from their original and natural state have no nutritional value. Salt is also prepared in a way that heats up and is harmful, in addition to the fact that needed salt by the body, exists in fruits and vegetables. Do not use permanganate or other disinfectants to wash fruits and vegetables.

Avoid hot rooms, hot clothes and dirty air. Do not use soap or shampoo, they contain chemicals that are harmful to the skin and the body; Take a shower as early as possible.

Raw vegans don't eat unnatural, cooked, meaty and fatty foods to get very thirsty; It does not consume worthless calories to be extinguished with cold water, it does not sweat to fill its place with water. In addition, natural foods have enough water with them. Nature has produced natural foods in such a way that they are full of water in summer and low in water in winter. When a raw eater is thirsty, he quenches his thirst by eating a cucumber or a tomato or a cup of fruit juice or pure spring water. For this purpose and in order to add water to compote etc., every living creature should prepare one or two glasses of spring water daily. In principle, a live-eater should not allow any chemical or toxic substances into his body, even if the amount is very small; it is that he should not drink tap water. This water has chlorine and fluoride, and no matter how little it is, because it has the power to kill microbes, it also has the power to damage the cells of the human body. Human cells are also sensitive like microbes, they are also quickly poisoned and fail, strong criticisms are heard in all over the world on this wrong practice. Some people underestimate this poisoning, they take this tap water, add some new chemicals and poisons to it, make it different colors and call it non-alcoholic drinks. Once a month, we bring a few jugs of water from the Vanak spring of Tehran that is near to us and use it. There is a huge difference between the taste and smell of spring water and tap water.

Spraying and chemical fertilizers is one of the unwise actions of the "civilized" people of this era. Greedy people poison the earth with chemical fertilizers and artificially increase the product amount and instead lower its quality; they spray fruits and vegetables when they are ripe and sell them to people immediately.

Later, the doctor himself, who invented this spraying, sees the bad result of his own work and instead of stopping it, he forbids eating fruits and vegetables.

Now that the situation is like this, people should not use the harm of spraying as an excuse and cook fruits and vegetables. Because if spraying destroys the value of the product by for example 10%, cooking destroys the value by 100%, and at the same time, it produces far more poison in dead food than spraying. People should wash these poisoned foods well and at the same time fight against this inhumane practice. Now people's voices are raised from all over the world. They form associations, print magazines, and open special stores and sanatoriums and boarding houses to feed people with food that has been produced without chemical fertilizers and pesticides. Some of my foreign followers, buy a land for themselves to have a private garden and provide their fruit and vegetable needs without chemical fertilizers and live in real freedom.

### **Adventure of the Tehran Raw-Vegans Society**

I decided to translate and publish my book in French, German, Spanish and Arabic, and also to make books from very interesting letters and expand my global activity, but friends and raw foodists insisted to establish a club in Tehran. Together with some founders, we collected a sum of money between us, prepared a charter and started the work. I gave my two large rooms on the ground floor of my home with water, electricity and telephone free of charge to the club and spent two and a half years in managing the club and raw vegan restaurant. I gathered members who were faithful to my philosophy and the constitution of our



community, and they were active, helped, organized friendly meetings, talked about the results they got from eating raw, collected gifts, and they joked like a big family and in this way we gathered about 900 members.

One year after the formation of the group, Mr. Javad Ramezani, who was seriously ill and the doctors had cut his stomach and duodenum and made changes in his stomach, he came to the club while dying (according to what he said) and became a member, he became a raw eater and was saved from death. He was very interested in the activities of the community and was elected as a member of the board of directors. Unfortunately, he could never understand the deep and simple philosophy of raw veganism. He sometimes said: "My thought has not yet reached Aterhov's mind, it may reach there one day." I have been waiting for these days for years, but in vain. Mr. Ramezani said: "Aterhov should not attack doctors and medical science and condemn their wrong activities." But I did not have this opinion and I wanted to tell people the truth.

When the activities of the club became a little prosperous, I emptied the first floor of my house, added to the previous rooms with a third of the rent offered by the brokers, and gave them to the club (half of the house belong to my wife. I don't get rent from my half). With my own expense, I opened a special door to the street and built a 30 cubic meter basement for storage, the members of the community did not hold regular meetings, we appointed a board of directors among some of the active members, and in order to prove to Mr. Ramezani that He is wrong in his views, I let him choose the board himself. He chose Dr. Mohammad

Kaar (Professor of Tehran Medical University) as the Chairman of the Board of Directors. This doctor wrote a book called "Raw Vegetarianism" full of absurd and meaningless laboratory formulas and he wasted the audience's time with worthless lectures. He soon created an uproar in the club that we had to expel him from the membership according to Article 29 of the club constitution. He went with some of his like-minded people, invested and opened a club called "Scientific Raw Vegetarianism" on Ministers St, each person lost 40 or 50 thousands tomans and closed it, some people also regretted their work and rejoined our club. Mr. Ramezani did not learn from his wrong action, but on the contrary, instead of one doctor, he brought two or three other doctors into the club to give speech.

If they had accepted my words that I had written years ago in the Raw-Eating book, most of the people who died in recent years would be alive now. For example Dr. Iqbal, the head of the medical system, who handed me over to the court to be punished, but he himself was punished in real life and died. Fortunately, the court dismissed the complaint of the medical system as baseless and ruled in my favor. The medical system claimed that I'm interfering the medical "science" but I do not have anything to do with them, I just show the way of nature and this right path will keep people healthy and cure them, and as a result, the income way of doctors is blocked, but no businessman likes his moneymaking business get destroyed! In the book "Raw-Eating" in which the philosophy of raw food is interpreted and with the guidance of this book, the society of raw vegans is formed, some basic points are mentioned that prove the wrongness and harmfulness of medical science.

I rely a lot on the flow of this association and club because I have to prove how I wasted all my time for six years, stayed away from global activities, worked hard and spent money, but all these efforts were wasted because a few cheaters, they took the community, the club, and the restaurant with all its property and furniture from me and the real members of the community and handed them over to the opponents. Mr. Javad Ramezani, a cruel and money-lover rich businessman; He could not understand the deep meaning of the very simple and excellent philosophy of raw veganism, contrary to my opinion, he thought that he would reach his destination sooner through science. He believed in his opinion so much and was so sure of own self that he decided to do something to expel me from the club and put himself in my place and his scientific philosophy in place of the law of nature. They put Dr. Majdi's "Eat and become beautiful" book instead of raw eating book and take over the club with the help of doctors. To achieve this dangerous goal, he had to use hundreds of violations, law breaking, lying, threats, coercion, staging, etc. First, he tried to get MohammadReza Mahtabi and Manouchehr Safarzadeh (two members of the board of directors) away from him.

Mr. Mahtabi, a 28-year-old agricultural engineer who survived severe kidney disease by eating raw food, helped repair the club for several months. He was a talented young man who proudly did all the wiring, plumbing, painting and carpentry of the club with the help of Mr. Safarzadeh. Then he managed the entire club and restaurant for six months. He studied the preparation of raw salads and wrote a book entitled "Raw vegan foods, the only human food". Mr. Mahtabi wanted to establish an agricultural company for the

society, but his plan was left unfinished because the proper land was not found; Mr. Mahtabi is not very wealthy, and if we had given him a small salary to manage the club and kept him, our club would not have been in this miserable situation, but Mr. Ramezani was harassed so much that he ran away from us and told his friends: "I will go, eat cooked and die." And he did the same. He went to Khorramshahr, got a job in Keshavarzi bank, moved away from home, friends and people, stayed alone, cooked, and as a result, his kidney disease reappeared and killed him.

Mr. Manouchehr Saffarzadeh worked hard for the club and helped, but because he understood the deep philosophy of raw veganism best of all and always defended it, it was because Mr. Ramezani looked at him as an enemy, in this way. The board was dispersed. Mr. Safarzadeh went to Shiraz and Mr. Abulfazl Sadarat went to Jahrom, Mr. Ramezani and Mr. Kayhani stayed, Mr. Abulfazl Kayhani is not an important person, he is a relative of Mr. Ramezani and his loyal friend. I traveled abroad three or four times around this time, raw vegans invite me all over the world, they want to see me, and I sometimes go to see them. In these situations, Mr. Ramezani saw the field empty and started his dictatorship. We have a constitution drawn up by experienced jurists who have foreseen everything and strengthened my authority to prevent such violations; But Mr. Ramezani does not know the law. For him, his desire is the law.

According to Articles 18, 21, and 29, Mr. Ramezani and Mr. Kayhani were legally expelled from the community, and every move they made against me was illegal and coercive. If I wanted to, I could have used my

authority in time, removed them and taken over the management of the association, but as strange as it may seem, I had a special interest in Mr. Ramezani for his active and dynamic spirit, especially that he was active and helping the association. He had organized a seminar in his garden. I didn't want to upset him; I was always waiting for him to accept his mistake and come back to us. Maybe he was mocking me and considered himself wise because he accepts medical science, but I don't. He said: "One must use all kinds of means and plans to fight." Mr. Ramezani has appointed one of his friends and classmates, Mr. Mostaan, as a bookkeeper, who takes all the money collected from the sale of the restaurant, office, and membership to the bank and pours it into Mr. Ramezani's personal account. What does Mr. Ramezani do with this money? No one knows and does not answer to anyone. Mr. Ramezani had made a seal; On Sundays and Tuesdays from 16:00 to 20:00 and on Thursdays from 13:00 to 15:00 lectures and patients were examined for free by doctors and nutritionists. He puts this seal on the leaflets that I had printed at my own expense, because Mr. Ramezani does not spend money on advertising. The medical system complained to me that I was interfering in medical work, now Mr. Ramezani is doing this.

They started acupuncture in the club for a while; Women, children, old and young, sitting by the wall with needles stuck in their ears, nose, lips, forehead, hands and knees like silent statues! They were waiting for the disease to jump out from the tip of the needle and save them! What kind of funny scenes does not the ignorance of the cooked people create? Dr. Nawab gave a speech through the club's speaker and announced that he does not agree with Hovannessian's opinion. Very well, Mr.

Nawab, if you don't agree with my philosophy, what are you doing in this club? There are millions of people in the world who are against raw veganism philosophy, do they all have the right to enter our own club and speak against us? When I issued a notice about these developments to inform the members, this angered Mr. Ramezani; He changed the lock on the door of the yard, which I shoveled myself and planted it with flowers, so that I cannot enter the yard to water the garden; The door to my office is locked and I had to open a new door to my office from the hallway. The entrance door of the club from the corridor is also locked from behind.

It was time to elect a new board of directors. Mr. Ramezani asked some people to prepare the invitations. Invitations were written and placed in envelopes. Mr. Ramezani took these envelopes to his home to stamp and post them, but not even one of them was posted, so that none of the members of the congregation knew about the election of the new board of directors. During these days, Mr. Ramezani had collected all the documents of the members and taken them to his home. He had ordered Mr. Mostaan not to accept anyone as a member. This is a big crime. Someone asked Mr. Ramezani that a certain gentleman wanted to become a member, why didn't you accept? And he answered: "I didn't like his appearance." No dictator in the world is willing to give such a rude answer. At his house, Mr. Ramezani invited friends, acquaintances, neighbors, relatives, and other people to the gathering and gave each of them a membership card so that they could enter the club and vote for him on election day.

On the appointed day of the election, Mr. Ramezani enters the club with a group of fake raw eating

pretenders and the text of a new constitution, with a new name, with a new center and with a new philosophy, which was passed by Mr. Ramezani in his house with only one "*secret*" vote. He introduced a group of doctors and others that he himself had chosen by a "secret" vote and said: "Whoever agrees, raise his hand." Several mercenaries raised their hands in surprise and Mr. Ramezani announces: "It was approved." Several real members of the club, protested. I entered the club from my house and announced that Mr. Ramezani has been denied from membership of the community for a long time, so he has neither the right to vote nor to choose and be chosen. This election is illegal and fake. Mr. Ramezani registered this election and we did not protest because this new association is not related to ours. This is a new community with a new name, with a new purpose, with a new location, with a new constitution, with new books, with a new founder and secretary. Everyone is free to choose a goal for himself, gather a few like-minded people around him, form a society and register it; But in history, it has not been seen that an illegal group enters the population of its opponents, organizes a fake election for itself, removes the main founders of the community, and seizes all the property of the original population. This is like if the enemy besieges a city, a few residents of the city open the gate and hand over the city to the enemy. The raw eating society is against the wrong activity of doctors. Article 17 of the Constitution says: "A true raw vegan never gets sick and does not need medical treatment and procedures." Regarding accidents and crashes, we train raw vegan surgeons who will operate without antibiotics, without serum and without animal protein.

They tell me "why do you disagree with these doctors who are raw eaters and talk about raw food?" It is not true. Dr. Majdi tells people: "Sometimes you can eat it cooked, there is no problem." And he eats himself, Dr. Nawab believes that raw food should be started gradually. From the look and appearance of Dr. Rashti (one of the new board members), it can be understood that he is not a raw vegan. These doctors have made the raw food club the center of advertising and gather customers for their office to gain fame. Dr. Nawab has become the chairman of the board of directors, what is his presidency going to be? Just that he talks about protein and vitamins for one hour a week and that's it? The president should preside over the affairs of the club.

I wonder how Dr. Majdi, Dr. Nawab, Dr. Rashti and other board members chosen by Mr. Ramezani, no matter how much they are against my philosophy, how they agreed to participate in this fake election with this shameful staging and remove Hovannessian, the founder and permanent secretary of the association? They replaced the founders, they took the club that I created and managed for six years out of my hands, and they forcefully took over the club with all its equipment and facilities. Our association does not need "scientific" lectures. When we accept nature's command *"don't eat cooked stuff, don't eat the animals, eat raw vegan food as much as you like and whatever you like."* We don't need to hear anything else.

Mr. Ramezani imagines himself a scientist. When the raw eaters surround me and ask questions, Mr. Ramezani enters the conversation and talks about glucose and glucogen. One day, during an argument,



Mr. Kayhani started swearing at me. He raised his hand and shouted five or six times: "Armenian, Armenian, Armenian." As if Armenian is a kind of curse! I am proud to be Armenian-Iranian and live in Iran. The Armenians has never been ill-treated by Persian compatriots and has always enjoyed their respect. Creating hatred between nations is one of the worst things. Similar happened one day during a board meeting, during an argument, Dr. Kaar lost his composure for a moment and started swearing at me that I had only heard from the mouths of people in the street in my life. I was sitting silently, watching in amazement how this respectable person lost himself and did not understand what he was saying. He slammed his hands on the table and said: "You go upstairs and sit in your room, here is ours, not yours." Because in the previous time, he had regretted his behavior and hugged me, kissed me and apologized, I forgave him; But the second time it went completely out of bounds. We had to expel him together with Mr. Azdanlou, not only from the board of directors, but also from the membership of the association.

In order to annoy me, Mr. Ramezani has not paid his rent to me for five months. One day he burst crazy into the club and when he saw me talking to a few people about raw-eating, he yelled "Get out of here." Then he ordered the worker he had just hired: "Throw this out." This worker also pushed me and threw me out of the stairs of the entrance door, and I fell to the ground and my head hit a motorcycle and was injured. If I wasn't a raw foodist, I would have had a stroke. We went to the police station and from there to the medical examiner, this worker wanted to exonerate himself and repeated loudly: "Aterhov says that if you touch the table, you will

lose weight." He had learned so much from raw-eating! Mr. Ramezani also wanted to show some papers to the investigator, but the investigator pushed them back. Surely, Mr. Ramezani wanted to show his famous constitution and prove that he is the secretary of the association and I am the troublemaker. What could I do here? I forgave and came out; Was this the last scene of comedy or tragedy? I do not know, Mr. Ramezani should answer. He threatened me many times that he would do something to force me to flee naked from Iran! Maybe it is his custom because he owes his life to my philosophy, this is also a kind of thanks giving! When they ask him: "Then where is Aterhov?" He answers: "He is anti-science." *Here I declare that any harm to my life and property is from him (or same penetrating agents).*

Selfishness and unwise grudge drives some people to the point where that my phone book that contains the names of all the members were registered and two folders full of English mails (about a thousand) are missing from my office. I cannot say whose work this vile and unworthy act may be, but I know this much that it is the work of a person who wants to make contact with the followers of raw veganism and abuse them. It is clear that the person who stole them cannot use them publicly. Whoever did this, did it out of ignorance. I forgive and request that if he feels a little humanity in his heart, after he gets his meaning from them, post these letters back to me; because these letters will be extremely important and valuable for me and for the history of raw veganism in the future.

Now that I don't go to the club, the treated people come to the second floor of my villa to give thanks and to get information and buy books. We formed a

community with a philosophy written in the book of raw food. Anyone who does not accept this book cannot become a member of this community. Doctors who want to become members of the raw vegans association, should close their offices and not write prescriptions or poisons to patients, but they are doctors after all and they cannot give up their wrong knowledge completely, and if they do, they have nothing to do and have nothing to say. They lecture in our club about vitamins, proteins and properties of plants. These words are just nonsense, myths, fantasy and fabrication. In the beginning, they lectured three times a week, later one day a week and only for one hour. Soon people will get tired of hearing these words and they will run out of words, what are they going to do next? How much can they fool people?

After all, if a day, Ramezani deepens his studies and accepts his mistakes, gives up medical *science*, returns to nature and submits to the laws of nature, we are open to accept him and I will ignore what hardships has been done to me; There is no grudge in the ethics of true raw vegans, we are forgiver.

***Raw-  
Vegani  
sm is  
standin  
g  
higher  
than  
all  
revolut  
ions<sup>2009</sup> in  
the  
history***